This is a singular volume
in that class which the
French term "Voyages imaginaires"
It is rarely met with,
more especially in good
condition and with the
plates of the Flying Machine
and the Sea Monsters.

A NARRATIVE OF THE Life and aſtoniſhing ADVENTURES OF JOHN DANIEL,

A Smith at Royſton in Hertfortſhire,
For a Courſe of ſeventy Years.

CONTAINING,

The melancholy Occaſion of his Travels. His Shipwreck with one Companion on a deſolate Iſland. Their way of Life. His accidental diſcovery of a Woman for his Companion. Their peopling the Iſland.

ALSO,

A Deſcription of a moſt ſurpriſing Engine, invented by his Son Jacob, on which he flew to the Moon, with ſome Account of its Inhabitants. His return, and accidental Fall into the Habitation of a Sea-Monſter, with whom he lived two Years. His further Excurſions in Search of England. His Reſidence in Lapland, and Travels to Norway, from whence he arrived at Aldborough, and further Tranſactions till his death, in 1711. Aged 97.

Illuſtrated with ſeveral Copper Plates,
Engraved by Mr. BOITARD.

Taken from his own Mouth,
By Mr. RALPH MORRIS.

LONDON:
Printed for M. COOPER, at the *Globe* in *Paternoſter-Row*. MDCCLI.

4/2

THE CONTENTS.

CHAP. I.

THE Author, John Daniel, is bred a ſmith under his father. His father's ſecond marriage. His mother-in-law would debauch him; uſes ſtratagems. Flies from his father's Page 1

CHAP. II.

Arrives at Norwich. Goes journeyman. Is terrified at an advertiſement, with a reward for apprehending him. Flies to Yarmouth. Enters on ſhipboard for the Streights 14

CHAP. III.

Arrives at Leghorn. Touches at the Canaries in his return. Enters with a Dutch captain for China. Is caſt away. Gets to land with one Thomas. In great diſtreſs for food and water. Go in ſearch of them, but in vain. Find water. Terrified by a wild boar. Are in great diſtreſs for food. Hope of meeting inhabitants. Combat a wild bull. Kill him. Eat of him before dead. Lodge in a tree 22

CHAP. IV.

Awaked by a herd of wild ſwine. Almoſt devoured with flies. Project of catching

catching ſwine in a pit. Work hard at it. Catch a boar and pig. Kill the boar. Get fire to dreſs it 43

CHAP. V.

Make buckets of the boar's ſkin. Make thread of the guts. Feed a year on hog meat. Take a progreſs. Are ſtopt by wild cattle. Find nuts. Aſcend a mountain. Diſcover they are on an iſland. Know not what part of the world they are in. Set their pit trap. Catch a calf. Durſt not come out of their tree for three days. Venture to their pit. Are frighted. Kill a cow. Take the calf. Reflections on the cow's tenderneſs to her calf. Find ſalt 56

CHAP. VI.

Pickle their meat in ſkins and hang it in the trees. Build a booth on the mountain. Loſes Thomas. Finds him ſpeechleſs. Thomas will not diſcover his hurt. Daniel inſiſts on aſſiſting him. Thomas diſcovers that ſhe is a

Woman. Daniel relieves her. His reflection. Watches her all night 74

CHAP. VII.

Difference of behaviour between them. Draws her to the booth. Lays her to reſt. Recovers. Daniel courts her. Her objections. He overcomes them. Their marriage ceremony 84

CHAP. VIII.

Ruth Comin gives an account of her family, and the cauſe of her appearing in man's apparel. Their reflections on her former love. Have a ſon. Have a calf. Daniel finds two corps on the ſhore, and ſtrips them. Ruth ſurpriſed. His reflection thereon. Goes again to the ſea. Finds ſeveral things. Loads his cow home. Forms ſchemes to diſpoſe of his cargo. Lays deſign of building, but relinquiſhes it. Want many things 95

CHAP.

CHAP. IX.

Daniel and Ruth walk to the ſea. He finds a cheſt. Its contents. Gets it to ſhore. Brings home goods upon the cow. Makes a ſledge of the cheſt. Brings all home. Builds an houſe. In his ſixth year a violent hurricane. Hears guns. Goes to the ſea. Sees a ſhip wrecked. Reflections thereon. Ship's boat drives to ſhore with a bitch in her. Fears her, but ſpares her. Gets the boat 112

CHAP. X.

Increaſe of his family. Sees part of the ſhip above water. Finds a turtle, but knows not what it is. Sails in the boat. Takes the turtle on board. Boards the ſhip. Brings home a cargo. Account of what he got from the ſhip. Builds an houſe by the ſhore. Family increaſes. Finds ſeeds on board, and ſows them. Gets fowls. Breeds tame pigs 129

CHAP. XI.

Diſcourſe between Daniel and Ruth on marrying their eldeſt ſon and daughter. Marries two more ſons to two daughters. Jacob, his fourth ſon, ingenious at ſmiths work. Their diſcourſe. Jacob falls on a ſecret ſcheme. Marries all his children but Jacob. Deſcription of a ſtrange amphibious animal. Goes in ſearch of a ſettlement for his younger children. Deſcription of three ſeveral places for ſettlements. Harry pitches on the laſt. Billy on the middlemoſt. Return home 142

CHAP. XII.

Prepare victuals and materials to begin new ſettlements. Order of their march. Settles Billy, and leaves him a ſtock. Settles Harry, and leaves him a ſtock. Daniel's method to keep unity in his family. Name of his iſland. Has been there forty years. Jacob borrows the cart.

cart. Stays three days in the mountain. Daniel thinks Jacob had made a ſhip there. Sees it move. Jacob ſhews his father what he has been doing. Had been making a machine to fly in. A leaf to prevent hunger 161

CHAP. XIII.

Daniel can't comprehend Jacob's machine. Daniel and Ruth ſet out to viſit their ſeveral children planted round the iſland. Settle among them regulations for their conduct. Reſolve to deſtroy all the wild kine and ſwine. Their method. Daniel goes with Jacob to ſee him fly his machine, which he called his eagle. Deſcription of its parts. Daniel's thoughts of it. Jacob flies in it; and entreats his father, who conſents 173

CHAP. XIV.

Daniel and Jacob fly together. Shoot over the edge of the mountain, and can't

can't recover it again. Flew out of knowledge. Reflections on their condition. Are in the dark. Daniel's reflections on his wife's fears. See the ſun. Could not diſcern themſelves to move. See a vaſt moon. The eagle tumbles headlong. Jacob rights it again. Sees earth. Alight on a mountain at ſun ſet 184

CHAP. XV.

Run over their adventures. Sleep under the eagle's wings much longer than a night. See no light. Thoughts of the continued darkneſs. Moon decreaſes. Deſcend the mountain. See ſtrange creatures by moon-light. Hope for day. See the ſun. Stays very long with them. See ſtrange people, &c. Catch one of them. Taſte their food. Does them little good. A multitude of people come to them. They take Daniel and Jacob home with them. Deſcription of their dwellings. Their liquors. Their eatables. Strange proceſſion.

Talk

Talk of religious ſigns. Dark again. Take leave of their hoſts. Aſcend a mountain for proſpect. See no towns, or habitations. Return to the eagle 191

CHAP. XVI.

Mount the eagle. The face of the country. Are in the dark. See the ſun before them. The eagle totters and turns over, yet both ſit ſafe. Dark again. At day-light ſee a city. Make towards it. Are ſhot at. Fly over it. Daniel inſiſted on landing on the next earth. See land. Puſh for it. It is a rock. Alight. Overſhoot themſelves, and fall into a deep pit. Their terror on hearing a voice. Jacob fears the devil. A light brought by two horrid figures. Deſcription of them. Their diſcourſe. Deſcription of the cave. Eat fiſh. Daniel relates part of his journey. The monſter's ſurpriſe. Go to reſt. Are ſurpriſed at the furniture. Their reflections 209

CHAP. XVII.

Their ſurpriſe next morning, Get ſeveral utenſils. Daniel views the rock with the monſter. Relates his journey. Other diſcourſe on his travels. Monſter very learned. Satisfies Daniel he had been in the moon. Monſter gives account of his parents. Their being caſt upon that rock. What his nature is. Laments his deformity. Daniel comforts him 229

CHAP. XVIII.

Reaſoning between Daniel and the monſter. Shews Daniel his children. Daniel makes ſalt. Find the eagle ſafe. Shew it and its uſe to the monſter. Monſters catch an oil-fiſh. Manner of making oil. Views the contents of a cabinet. The monſter makes him preſents out of it. Finds a manuſcript of the monſter's mother's, containing her hiſtory and that of the monſter's generation. Afraid

Afraid to inform him of it. Forms a project to leave him. Perfects it 245

CHAP. XIX.

The courſe Daniel and Jacob took in flight. Alight and ſearch habitations. Find none. Take flight again. Fall in with Laplanders. They are terrified. Conſult their drum if they ſhall admit him. Daniel hears bad news from the Iſle of Providence 260

CHAP. XX.

Stays with the Laplanders. Has hopes of reaching England. Different ſeaſons of Lapland. Daniel and Jacob's diſcourſe of England. Set out with a Dutchman on foot for Norway. Carries his eagle. Deſcribe the way. Adventures by the way. Hear of the whale fiſhing ſhips 273

CHAP. XXI.

Endeavour to get on board the whale ſhips. Deſcription of Daniel. Are refuſed. Speaks with captain Nevil. Offers a preſent for his paſſage. Knows the captain's family. Hears of his father's death and circumſtances. Relates his adventures. Jacob to work his paſſage. Jacob's death. Land at Aldborough 288

CHAP. XXII.

Captain takes Daniel home. Relates his adventures to the captain's wife and children. Their reflections. Shews Mrs. Nevil the manuſcript. She cannot read it. Goes with captain Nevil to Royſton. Hears a melancholy account of his father and mother. Goes with captain Nevil to parſon Williams. Deſcription of the parſon. His entertainment. Parſon hears his ſtory. Send for the eagle. Parſon is ſatisfied it will

will fly. Reflections of the parſon's. Mr. Williams offers him a living with him. Shews them his watch and jewels. Value them at above a thouſand pounds. Preſents captain Nevil with a ring. Gives Williams the reſt to maintain him 296

CHAP. XXIII.

Account of the writer of this hiſtory, nephew to Williams. Put into form by him. Williams's death. The writer his executor takes mr. Daniel to Durham. Grows childiſh and dies 316

20 JY 63

CHAP. I.

The author, John Daniel, is bred a ſmith under his father. His father's ſecond marriage. His mother-in-law would debauch him; uſes ſtratagems. Flies from his father's.

BEING about to commit to writing the tranſactions of my own life for upwards of ſeventy years, and therein to give an account of ſome of the moſt ſurpriſing adventures that ever befel any one man in the univerſe; I ſhall not purſue the uſual method, of ſetting out my birth and parentage, with other minute occurrences of my childhood; but ſhall content myſelf, with leaving my family in their native obſcurity; and ſhall only declare, that my father Ralph Daniel, was a houſe-ſmith at Royſton in Hertfordſhire, and that when I was about fourteen years old, he bound

me apprentice to him, with whom I ſerved out my time, and was acknowledged by all his cuſtomers to be a very good proficient in my way, giving a general ſatisfaction to every one that I worked for; inſomuch, that when I came out of my time, I had ſeveral offers of ſums of money to ſet me up for myſelf, and had certainly embraced thoſe propoſals, from the great proſpect I had of buſineſs, but for the reſpect that I bore to my father; who being fully ſenſible of the prejudice it muſt have been to him, intreated me to continue as his journeyman for ſome few years longer, till I might be better practiſed in my profeſſion, and poſſibly might meet with ſomething more to my advantage, than I could then expect from ſo early an appearance in life on my own footing. I therefore entered into articles with him, for remaining in his ſervice three years, at a certain wages, lodging and board, and wrought with great aſſiduity at his forge.

My father was ſomewhat in years, being near ſixty, and (having lived a widower for eight years) in about ſix months after I had made my agreement with him, he brought home a young wife, ſcarce turned of twenty. At her firſt coming home, (for my father had kept all know-

ledge of his courtſhip from me,) I grew very uneaſy, and intimated to him, that if I had in the leaſt expected to have lived under a miſtreſs as well as a maſter, I ſhould never have conſented to have obliged myſelf to continue with him for the new term.

My father ſeemed very ſorry for my concern, but aſſured me, that his new wife ſhould claim no pre-eminence over me, or have any thing to do with me; and withal, prevailed with me to behave civily and kindly to her, for his ſake; and I believe he gave her the ſame caution, with reſpect to me; for from the firſt week of her being ſettled in the family, I could plainly perceive, either that ſhe was an intollerable hypocrite, or that I was her no ſmall favourite; and I could viſibly collect, that her civil and obliging treatment of me, gave my father a very ſenſible pleaſure.

My father had been nightly uſed to ſmoak his pipe, and drink a cup with ſome neighbours, who met at a public houſe adjacent, as conſtantly as the clock ſtruck eight, and parted, ſo ſure as it had advanced to the hour of ten; and this was his accuſtomed practice throughout the whole year. As for my own part, I

muſt ſay, that I was very virtuouſly inclined, as any young fellow could well be; I had never in my life, to my knowledge, ſat a quarter of an hour in a public houſe, or ever went near one for the ſake of the liquor, or any otherways, than juſt to quench my thirſt, and return; my greateſt delight centering, in beſtowing my whole ſurplus time, in ſtudying the powers and operations of mechaniſm, or in deviſing, or practiſing upon ſome mechanical contrivance or other; and I had by me divers little models of great curioſity.

The above exerciſes being my chief employment after work time, and my father being, as I ſaid before, conſtantly abroad till ten o'clock, my new mother-in-law ſpent moſt part of his abſence with me, and was daily ſo laviſh in her commendations of my ingenuity and ſobriety, till at length, no two could be more familiar, or better pleaſed with each other's company than we were: and oh! if my father had but been of my temper, and had loved home as well as myſelf, how happy, ſhe would ſay, they might have been! but for a huſband, whoſe buſineſs kept him from her all day, never to ſpend an hour with her till bed-time, made her life ſit very heavy and uneaſy to her.

It is unaccountable, how by frequent converſe, the different ſexes inſinuate into each other's good opinion; from whence proceeds a liking, which cannot long endure till it becomes productive of love; for at my mother-in-law's firſt marriage, I almoſt hated but to think of her, and yet by her affability, and engaging behaviour, in ſix month's time, ſhe had ſo bewitched my affections, that I had almoſt brought myſelf to the temper of cuckolding my own father. In ſhort, ſhe had proceeded ſo far as to offer herſelf to my embraces.

Her perſon was ſo far from being diſagreeable, that it was really amiable; and had ſhe not been my father's wife, I would willingly have made her my own: but I could not condeſcend ſo far to her bewitcheries, as to commit an unbecoming act, againſt ſo kind a parent: this ſhe perceiving, as we were alone one night, expreſſed her inclination to me, in ſtronger terms than at any time before; and having from my anſwer ſuſpected her diſappointment; under pretence of falling into a fit, and of being on that account, excuſable for whatever might be the conſequence, ſhe threw herſelf into ſuch an indecent poſture, as I ſhall take no other notice of here, than to aſſure my reader,

it cauſed me immediately to ſtep out of the room, and call the maid to take care of her; but I had no ſooner done it, than ſhe ſtarted up, compoſed herſelf, and meeting her half way, told her, ſhe did not now want her.

This plain artifice, added to what had paſſed before between us, put it out of all doubt, how far ſhe would have proceeded, and gave me the utmoſt diſquiet, both on my father's account and my own; nay, it even drove me from home at all ſuch times as my father was not there, which excited in me a reliſh for drinking.

My head was never free, from the thoughts of what might at ſome unguarded hour happen from her attempts; eſpecially, as I was but too ſenſible, that I had not the leaſt diſregard to her perſon, and was only obſtructed by a dint of reaſon from accompliſhing her deſires; and thinks I, how long reaſon may continue the maſtery of inclination, it is difficult to ſay, and dangerous to truſt to.

I had almoſt determined to inform my father of it; but how to prove my aſſertion would be hazardous: If he ſhould believe me, ſays I, he is undone for his life; if he ſhould diſcredit me, there are ſo many ways to enforce her innocence, againſt

againſt my ſingle atteſtation of the fact, that I may greatly leſſen my father's eſteem for me, without opening his own eyes, as to her perfidy.

What muſt be done? I could not long continue in my then preſent ſituation; for home, and that of an evening, as I ſaid, (which was ever the time and place I took moſt delight in) was now become irkſome to me, and my reſt on nights was broke in upon, by the concern I ſuffered each day, as my affairs were then circumſtanced.

Whilſt theſe cogitations engroſſed almoſt my whole being, my father going to London one day, to pay for ſome, and to beſpeak other goods, I took care to dine abroad; and ſo ſoon as ſhop was ſhut in the evening, I went to the alehouſe, where I ſtayed till eleven o'clock at night, hoping that my mother-in-law would be in bed before I came home; and upon enquiry, the maid told me, ſhe was ſo: That news ſettling my doubts, I retired alſo to bed, very much compoſed; condemning myſelf for my ſuſpicions of her, who I now imagined had laid aſide all further thoughts of me, or elſe ſhe would not have eſcaped ſo fair an opportunity of gratifying herſelf, as my having drank ſo

late, might have been ſuppoſed to furniſh her with; but I had not been long aſleep, before I was diſturbed by an hand and arm, which I felt lying croſs my body. My ſurpriſe at this unexpected appearance encreaſed proportionably, as my wakefulneſs returned upon me; at laſt, demanding who was there, I was anſwered only by a ſqueeze with the arm that enclaſped me; nor could I get any further ſatisfaction, till turning about, who are you, ſays I? My mother-in-law, (for I ſoon gueſſed who was my bedfellow) replied, can you be at a loſs, dear Jacky, to know who it is in all the world that dies for you? At ſaying this, ſhe taking my right hand in her left, and preſſing it to her boſom: Mother, ſays I, (taking hold of her wedding ring,) methinks you ſhould have otherwiſe diſpoſed of this, and not have brought it hither as a memento to me, how I ought to behave in this caſe; for can you imagine, that whilſt I am in poſſeſſion of that token, which in the preſence of the Almighty has appropriated you by ſolemn vow to my father, I can be ſo abandoned, as to interpoſe to the breach of that union you have engaged to each other, both of perſons and affections? No, had you been at your

your own diſpoſal, I have often reflected on the ſatisfaction I could have received from your love; but be aſſured, no gratification of my own deſires ſhall ever urge me to ſo atrocious a crime as you ſeem inclinable to perpetrate with me.

I was then proceeding to reaſon with her upon the horridneſs of the fact, and of what we muſt neceſſarily think of each other, if ever our merciful Creator ſhould ſuffer us to enjoy the light again after the commiſſion of ſuch a crime; when perceiving her ſilent, reſtleſs, and feeling about the bolſter for ſomewhat; I had but juſt time to ſeiſe her hand, and thereby gain intelligence of the cauſe, as ſhe was going to plunge a dagger in my breaſt; but having her faſt, with her right hand in my left, I with my right wrung the inſtrument from her, and at the ſame time, could ſcarce reſtrain myſelf from ſheathing it in her bowels.

I immediately flung myſelf out of bed, determined to endure ſuch company no longer; and it being a little moon-light, made a ſhift to dreſs myſelf; (for I had firſt run to my own door, locked it, and had taken out the key, that ſhe might not eſcape down before me, where, perhaps, ſhe might, have hatched ſome further plot, to

have diſpoſſeſſed me of my life ;) I then repreſented her own wicked actions, in the moſt ſhocking light I could expoſe them, and told her, that but for the regard I had for my father, and leſt I ſhould deſtroy his future peace, I would certainly declare her whole conduct to him : but, ſays I, that ſo much villainy may not paſs wholly unobſerved, I am determined to double lock you in here into my room, from whence I am aſſured you cannot get forth, without expoſing the deſign of your vile proſtitution.

She heard all my charges againſt her virtue and honour with ſeeming unconcern, ſo long as ſhe thought they might yet lie concealed ; but ſhe no ſooner perceived that I meant to expoſe her, than ſhe fell into tears ; then leaping from the bed, and falling at my feet, implored me, by all the ſtrongeſt tyes in nature, not to lock her in, to make her the ſcorn and contempt of her own ſervant, who I was ſenſible muſt be the perſon to releaſe her ; inſiſting, that as what ſhe had done, was only through an irreſiſtible paſſion for me, which ſhe was not able to controul, it would be the height of barbarity in me to expoſe her for it ; and at the ſame time declared, with moſt bitter imprecations, that

that if I perſiſted in it, ſhe would be her own executioner before morning, by ſome means or other, rather than live to be a publick ridicule.

Her laſt argument, I muſt confeſs, had the greateſt weight with me; for I now became cool enough to conſider, that ſhould I by locking her in, occaſion her (through deſpair) to commit any raſh deed upon her life, as I ſhould not be found, (for I was determined to quit the country,) whatever ſhould happen to her, would be imputed to my act, and that perhaps, I might in ruining her reputation, bring my own life into danger. However, I ſeemed to give little heed to her entreaties, perſiſting in diſgracing her at leaſt; till obſerving her moſt extravagant in her requeſt for ſecrecy; I told her, that if ſhe would ſolemnly ſwear, that ſhe never would attempt to entrap any other perſon in like manner as ſhe had me, or on any account be falſe to my father's bed, I would keep all that had paſſed an inviolable ſecret; and at the ſame time aſſuring her, that I had determined to withdraw myſelf, both from her ſight and knowledge, that I might lay her under no further temptations; ſhe fell into the utmoſt fury: And will you go? Will you leave

us, ſaid ſhe? Then what occaſion for oaths to bind me? I deſpiſe the whole ſpecies where you are not to be found, nor can I ſay, I will not love you; but I will ſwear, to reſtrain my paſſion for you to the narroweſt limits poſſible.

Finding all that I could ſay would be to little purpoſe, and wanting to be gone, that I might proſecute my journey to ſome conſiderable diſtance before daylight, I opened my trunk, took out all my money, amounting to about eighteen pounds, my linen, and ſome few other things, and tying them up in an old frock, I bid her good-bye for ever; begging her, that as ſhe had turned me out of doors a vagabond, ſhe would mend her life, and ſuffer all her thoughts of love to center in my father.

She ran after me to the chamber door, begging me on her knees, if I had the leaſt regard for her, or could compaſſionate a diſtracted wretch, that I would only kiſs and forgive her before I went: Upon her preſſing her demand ſo movingly, I told her I would, bidding her riſe and compoſe herſelf; but offering to ſalute her, ſhe caught me round the neck, vowing ſhe would never more disjoin her arms, till I had

ſworn

ſworn to inform her in whatever part of the earth I ſhould ſettle.

She clung ſo cloſe to me, and ſeemed ſo reſolved, that I was compelled to threaten her deſtruction, by the dagger I then held in my hand; the terror of which, I was in hopes would have made her deſiſt: But inſtead of ſhewing the leaſt fear, ſhe aſſured me, her only ambition was to fall by my hand, and even begged it of me as a favour. However, after ſome ſtruggle, I ſprang from her, and ran violently down the ſtairs, left the dagger in the ſhop, and departed.

CHAP. II.

Arrives at Norwich. Goes journeyman. Is terrified at an advertiſement, with a reward for apprehending him. Flies to Yarmouth. Enters on ſhipboard for the Streights.

THE hurry of my ſpirits, and confuſion of my thoughts, upon quitting my father's houſe by night, as a malefactor, and in his abſence too, had taken ſuch

ſuch poſſeſſion of me, that I moved on, not knowing or conſidering whither I went, till on the approach of day-light, I perceived I was got into the New-market road; and having as yet formed no other deſign, but of tranſporting myſelf out of my mother's knowledge, I ſtill preſſed forwards: But had I not only debauched my mother, but murdered my father, it is impoſſible I could have been ſeiſed with more horrors, than at preſent ſurrounded me, from a reflection on the paſt ſcene. I wept in compaſſion to the poor old man, who I was aſſured would be inconſolable for the loſs of me; not only from the love he had ever borne to me, but for the diſappointment of his buſineſs, and for want of knowing what was become of me.

I had a great mind, and had almoſt come to a reſolution of writing to my father, and ſtating the whole occaſion of my diſquiet and departure to him; but then it occurred to me, that numberleſs inconveniencies might ariſe from thence; as probably a ſeparation from my mother, a recal of me, and poſſibly ſome miſchief from her to him, in order to make her way to me the clearer from all obſtacle; for I was convinced, that whilſt the leaſt poſſibility of engaging me remained, ſhe would

would ſtick at no villainy or deſperate meaſures whatſoever to obtain her ends. I therefore proceeded on my journey, and in a few days reached the city of Norwich.

I came in after duſk, on a Saturday evening, and took my ſtand at a little publick houſe, where I obtained a lodging; and the next day being Sunday, I went to church, and having ſurveyed the city, returned home to dinner.

The evening being wet, I did not ſtir out, and the rain occaſioned a great concourſe of perſons at my quarters, of different denominations, who being moſtly tradeſmen and labourers, it is eaſy to imagine what topics their diſcourſe chiefly turned upon; for in ſuch companies they are for the moſt part very communicative of the ſeveral particulars of their reſpective profeſſions.

I being a ſtranger to them, held but little ſhare of the converſation, till a watch-maker, (as I afterwards heard he was,) ſtarting ſomewhat of wheel-work, was anſwered by a ſmith, who oppoſed the poſition laid down by the meaſurer of time; upon which, ſome words ariſing, as to the powers of ſprings, levers, and weights, the debate growing warm, was referred to the company; but very few

were

were able to give any true gueſs at the force of the queſtion, ſave a mill-wright and a carpenter, who took different ſides; at length, perceiving they were not likely to come to a determination, I begged leave, though a ſtranger, to offer my opinion upon the ſtate of the caſe; which they readily granting, I ſet them right in the point; for being neither of them connoiſſures in the myſtery they framed their argument from, they wanted terms ſignificantly, to make each intelligible to the other, which I ſupplying them with from my reading, and giving them proper definitions of the operation of the engines, they were diſcourſing of, I brought them to an agreement.

I happening to give the company great ſatisfaction by the principles I had laid down, it was preſently aſked, what profeſſion I was of? To which, I replying, that I was bred a houſe-ſmith, and that I had travelled this way meerly for employment; one of the diſputants told me he was of the ſame profeſſion, and as I ſeemed by my diſcourſe, to be a maſter of my buſineſs, if I wanted work he would employ me: I thanked him for his good opinion of me, and the next morning, by his appointment, entered into his ſervice.

I continued to work with him for a fortnight, that is, till the Saturday fe'ennight after I had been hired, and had received four and twenty ſhillings for my two weeks pay. The next day being Sunday, my maſter, who was at the tavern, taking orders for ſome work of a very peculiar nature, ſent for me to receive inſtructions from the cuſtomer's own mouth, intending to employ me about it. I was aſked ſeveral queſtions, and gave my opinion upon them very much to their ſatisfaction; and whilſt they were further diſcourſing, I took up the news-paper, which then lay upon the table; but I had no ſooner caſt my eyes thereon, than I perceived an advertiſement, deſcribing myſelf, with a reward of ten pounds, for any one who would apprehend and ſecure me and ſend word to my father; and at the bottom it was ſaid, that if I would return to him, I ſhould be very favourably received. This ſight ſtruck me on an heap, being ſo plain a deſcription of my perſon, that no one who had ever ſeen me, but muſt be ſure, (to my thinking) who was meant by it.

I read it over again, and it hinting, that I had deſerted my father's ſervice, and robbed him of money and ſeveral other things, all which, I being conſcious to myſelf

myſelf was abſolutely falſe; it directly came into my mind, that my mother-in-law muſt have been the thief, and that it was through her purſuaſions, and from her remonſtrances to my father, that he had been induced to advertiſe me thus; and what confirmed my ſuſpicion that it muſt be her own doings, and that ſhe ſtill wanted to have me near her again was, the notice of being favourably received, if I returned.

I had no ſooner made myſelf maſter of this piece of intelligence, than I left the tavern, and began ſeriouſly to contemplate upon my unhappy circumſtances. I formed ſeveral ſucceſſive ſchemes to act upon, the laſt of which I ſtill apprehended to be the beſt: but neither of them counſelling my return, and dreading to be apprehended, purſuant to the advertiſement, whereby I might ſubject myſelf to the malice of an enraged and diſappointed woman, who, I doubted not would purſue me to death, rather than continue ſubject to my ſlights: I concluded upon quitting England, and ſettling in ſome foreign country, where I might at leaſt lead my life void of the danger I now found myſelf expoſed to; for I was maſter ſufficient of my buſineſs, to obtain a handſome proviſion from

from it on any land in Chriſtendom. All that gave me now the moſt concern was, that my books were ſtill at my father's, which I had no way left of recovering.

I had not the patience to wait till the next day, leſt I ſhould be taken into cuſtody; and though I had been guilty of no one ill act, yet the very apprehenſion of being ſought after, and liable to be ſtopped, gave me a ſuſpicion, that every man I met would ſecure me; ſo returning to my lodging, I paid my landlord about two ſhillings that I owed him, and packing up my things in the evening, I told him, I had taken a private lodging, and ſhould leave his houſe; letting him know, that if any one wanted me, he might receive their meſſages, and that I ſhould call in daily and drink with him as uſual.

I was ſo fearful of being ſeen in the ſtreets, getting out of the city, that the next turning to my lodgings leading down to the water ſide, I went thither, and pretending urgent buſineſs that required me, I agreed with a boatman for my paſſage to Claxton ferry, intending from thence to walk to Yarmouth, as the readieſt ſea-port to tranſport myſelf at.

The tide was now upon the ebb, and we had not gone many miles down the river

river Yare, before we overtook a barge laden with corn for Yarmouth; when quitting my boat, I agreed for my paſſage on board of her, and arrived ſafe there the next tide.

I no ſooner landed, than I went to the Quay, and offered myſelf to go on board any ſhip that was ready to ſail; but there being more hands already there than could get births, and I not coming under the rank of a ſailor, ſoon became ſatisfied, that there was no way for me to get from ſhoar, but either by working, or paying for my paſſage; there being no expectation of my receiving any thing for my labour.

Amongſt the reſt that I had applied to, there were two captains both juſt ready to ſail for the Streights, and I had offered to work my paſſage to Leghorn, Naples, or Genoa; but could get no determinate anſwer from either of them. One of them indeed ordered me to call on him the next morning, at a public houſe near the Quay, when he would give me a final anſwer: I did ſo, and whilſt we were diſcourſing, in comes the other captain, who was going with him, and hearing us argue about my paſſage, ſat him down, and took up the news to read.

It

It happened to be the ſame I had ſeen, or ſome other that had my father's advertiſement in it; and after he had read ſome time, here's a young dog, ſays he, has robbed his father, a ſmith, at Royſton; a villain, ſays he, to rob his father; our gallows groans for ſuch young ſcoundrels. I no ſooner heard his words, but, (had I not been then bowing to the captain, with whom I had agreed, and was turning out of the room) I muſt have diſcovered myſelf to them; for my legs would ſcarce bear me clear of the door-way, and if I might have had the world for the trouble of conveying myſelf croſs the ſtreet, I could not have earned it, but was obliged to ſquat down upon a bench in the paſſage juſt without the room; nor could I then ſuſtain my body upright, but was compelled to fall along on the bench.

The landlord ſeeing me in this condition, and look as white as aſhes, aſked me, if I was ill, but I could not ſpeak; till giving me firſt a glaſs of cold water, and as I recovered a little a dram of brandy upon it, I made a ſhift to tell him, that I was taken with ſuch a ſickneſs at my ſtomach, that I verily thought I had been dying. Happy it was for me, that my two captains within the room heard nothing of the

the ſtir; ſo I paid for my dram, and went directly on board my ſhip, not daring to be ſeen any longer on ſhoar.

CHAP. III.

Arrives at Leghorn. Touches at the Canaries in his return. Enters with a Dutch captain for China. Is caſt away. Gets to land with one Thomas. In great diſtreſs for food and water. Go in ſearch of them, but in vain. Find water. Terrified by a wild boar. Are in great diſtreſs for food. Hope of meeting inhabitants. Combat a wild bull. Kill him. Eat of him before dead. Lodge in a tree.

WE ſet ſail the next morning, and in due time arrived with our cargoe at Leghorn, where I got leave once or twice to go on ſhoar; for my view was, to obſerve if it would be worth my while to ſettle there; but I found the town ſo ſtocked with Engliſh manufactures of all ſorts in my way, at ſo much a cheaper price than I could poſſibly make them at, that I ſoon

ſoon dropt all thoughts of an eſtabliſhment in that country, and reſolved to return on board my ſhip for England again; hoping, that the remembrance of my deſcription would be quite worn out by that time.

Captain Marriot, (for that was my captain's name) was to touch at the Canaries, before he returned home, and accordingly we arrived there, where we ſtayed ſome time to take in a lading of wines, with which we were to proceed to England. During our ſtay, there arrived a Dutch veſſel, bound for China in the Eaſt-Indies, the maſter of whom was very diligent in picking up ſailors, having loſt ſeveral in his voyage. I no ſooner had notice thereof, but I told captain Marriot, that as I received no pay, I hoped he would pleaſe to diſmiſs me, acquainting him with the opportunity I now had of ſeeing the Eaſt-Indies, for which I had always had a great deſire; and that I did not doubt, but the Dutchman would enter me upon immediate pay. I confeſs, I was dubious whether the captain would have complied with me or not, and believe, that had we been outward bound he would not; but however, he made but little oppoſition, and ſeeing me ſo earneſtly bent upon going, he diſcharged me.

I immediately entered myſelf with the Dutch ſkipper upon full pay, he making no further enquiries after my abilities as a ſailor, and ſetting ſail, we had a very proſperous voyage, till we came near the Malaccas, when a ſtorm ariſing at north-north-eaſt, it blew ſuch a hurricane, that our ſhrouds were almoſt all torn away; we were at laſt obliged to cut down our maſts, and leave ourſelves to the mercy of the waves, and had we not had a very ſound ſhip under us, we could not have ſtood it an hour in the violence of the weather that lay on us.

This ſtorm continued with very little intermiſſion for ſeventeen days, during which time the ſea had been over us forty times, and we were half full of water, being obliged to throw out great part of the lading to lighten the ſhip, and to keep hands conſtantly at the pump.

We had thirty-two hands on board, but with labour and watching, we were ſo reduced in our ſtrengths, that we could ſcarce crawl about the deck; and what was now worſt of all was, we found but little mitigation of the ſtorm. On the eighteenth morning, the man at the ſteerage called out, he ſaw land; this, though it rejoiced us all, ſeemed to be but comfortleſs news at laſt,

when we heard it lay full to leeward of us; for having no command of the veſſel, we could expect little leſs than to be daſhed to pieces againſt the rocks or ſhoals the ſhore might abound with.

The captain having obſerved the land, could not conceive what it was called; but on coming nearer, we plainly perceived it to be a flat ſhore, and ſomewhat mountainous above it; we longed for night to take ſome obſervation, but it was too cloudy, and we were before the cloſe of day gotten within two leagues of it: As the wind ſtill continued very high, and our rudder anſwered but very little, having no ſail, we gave ourſelves up for loſt before morning; and about the middle of the night we felt ſuch a thump againſt the head of the veſſel as threw us all flat. Our conſternation was not over, when we felt ourſelves riſe up ſuddenly, and by the ſubſiding of the wave which then bore us, we were again let down with ſuch a force, as left the ſhip immoveable, and broke great part of the head through, and the waves waſhed us over and over with ſuch violence, that many of the men were forced away with them, nor could any moveable upon deck reſiſt their fury.

Myſelf and one or two more had laſhed ourſelves to a ſtump of one of the maſts, and held the end of the cord in our hands, in which poſture we reſiſted the waſh of two or three terrible waves that broke over us, though we were cruelly beaten and bruiſed by the impetuous force of the water againſt us.

When we recovered a little, we could not ſee a ſoul on board but ourſelves, and the water was up full chuck to the head of the hatchway; ſo that we did not doubt, but that every ſoul had periſhed but ourſelves; and whilſt we were bemoaning our conditions and waiting our fate, we heard ſomething daſh violently into the water behind us; upon which, Caleb Rogers, one of us, ran to ſee what it was, and calling to us, ſaid, it was the main-maſt, which had hung by the ropes to the ſide of the veſſel when it was waſhed over; he adviſed us, whilſt it was within reach, to commit ourſelves to it, and not ſtay till the ſhip bulged and we periſhed there. This invitation rouſing us, Peter, Thomas, and I, unlaſhed ourſelves and ran to him. The maſt ſtill hung at the top by a ſmall cord, which kept it from parting from the ſhip, and Rogers aſked, if either of us had an inſtrument or knife

to

to cut it a-float with, which each of us having, we all three leaped upon the maſt, and disjoining it from the veſſel, delivered up ourſelves to the mercy of the wind and waves.

We clung to the maſt till we were within half a mile of the land; but the billows broke ſo high over us, that we were immerſed frequently for near a minute wholly in water, before we roſe through them again; the repitition of which ſo ſpent and waſted our ſtrength and ſpirits, that we had ſcarce power to keep our holds to the maſt.

We were now within twenty yards of the ſhore, and at times could touch it with our feet, when Rogers, (impatient of his ſituation, and fearing, that the maſt ſhould ſtrike againſt his legs and break them, if any wave ſhould drive it on with violence) got off, at about middle deep, and ſtrove for the ſhore on his legs; but a prodigious ſurge purſuing him, raiſed up the maſt with us upon it, and letting us furiouſly down upon the ſand, almoſt beat the breath out of our bodies; (for we drew up our legs and lay flat upon it) This ſhock, we preſume, beat down poor Rogers, and the return of the breaker carried him back to the ſea, for we never ſaw him

more. By the time we had recovered the ſhock we had received, the water returning, left the maſt a-ground, which we no ſooner ſaw, than ſtarting up, we ran to land for our lives: Though one ſingle breaker more overtaking us, when it was almoſt ſpent, it threw us down indeed, but we were caſt too forward to be returned with it, and before another could come up to us, we were out of their reach.

When we had gotten out of danger of the water, we were amazed to reflect, how it was poſſible, (amidſt the contention of the waves, which laboured in our view like mountains,) for us two poor creatures to eſcape upon our maſt, which was of leſs force and ſignificance amongſt them, than a ſmall twig would be on a raging inland river.

We thanked God for our lives, and walked up to the more riſing ground, by which time the ſun was near ſetting, (for it had ſhone a little this afternoon;) we wrung each other's cloaths as dry as poſſibly we could, and having no change, we were forced to retain our wet ones; but we took the precaution to keep ſtirring, for fear of chilling our limbs; though after our fatigue, reſt would have been of great refreſhment to us: At length, it growing very

very dark, we were forced to lay us down amongſt ſome ſhrubs, and buſhes that grew there, to ſhelter us from the inclemency of the wind, which ſtill raged at a great rate.

We had not lain long, but Thomas, to my thinking, making a great buſtle, (for I could not ſee what he was at,) I aſked him, what he was doing? When he told me, that his ſhirt clinging moſt uncomfortably to his body, he had ſtripped himſelf, to let it dry in the wind. This induced me, who ſuffered the like inconvenience, to follow his example; ſo ſlipping on our jackets, we hung our breeches, waiſtcoats, and ſhirts to dry, which the wind ſoon perfected; and then ſlipping them on, we dried our jackets; and tho' it took us up ſome time, yet it fully recompenſed us, by the ſatisfaction with which we afterwards lay down to compoſe ourſelves; and I believe it contributed very much to the ſweetneſs of our ſleep, which laſted till the ſun was a good heighth the next morning.

We waked very reaſonably refreſhed, when being more eaſy in our minds, and our vigour being ſomewhat recruited, we returned thanks for the bleſſed refreſhment we had received, and turned our further

thoughts to the diſcovery of ſome means whereby we might, after ſo miraculous a preſervation, ſtill continue ourſelves in being. We looked wiſtfully towards our ſhip, of which we could only now and then ſee ſomething blackiſh, when the ſinking of the water on that ſpot diſcovered it; and being both very hungry, we agreed, that no time was to be loſt, in ſeeking ſomewhat to ſatisfy that demand: But whether the land or the ſhoar would be propereſt to direct our ſteps to firſt, was a doubt.

We ſaw at about half a mile diſtance from us, the ſkirts of ſome large woods, which ſeeming to riſe higher, the further they went from us, gave us hopes of diſcovering ſome eatable fruits there; but then, we knew not by what men or beaſts they might be inhabited, and poſſibly in ſeeking life there, we might meet with death; but our occaſions growing too urgent to be trifled with, we poſtponed all diſmal proſpects, to the hopes of accompliſhing our deſires, and having no baggage to carry, we were prepared as quick as thought for our march.

It was a flattiſh country we had to paſs, interſperſed with ſhrubs, ſeveral whereof were in flower, and ſmelt deliciouſly; we picked

picked of them as we went along, and chewing them, brought a refreſhing moiſture into our mouths, which was very pleaſing to us. We ſaw ſeveral ſmall creatures like weazels, as near as we could gueſs, but could not come nigh enough to any of them, to diſcover their juſt make and proportion; and at length, juſt before we came to the entrance of the woods, we ſaw ſeveral yellow berries, that grew on a ſort of ſhrub we had not before obſerved, though we were fearful of taſting them, in hopes of finding ſomewhat more to our purpoſe amongſt the great trees; but all our ſearch was in vain, for there was neither fruit, nut, or berry to be ſeen; and by the number of bloſſoms we met with, we judged it to be an improper time of the year to expect any, and this gave us a particular air of melancholy; for having paſſed through this wood, in the ſearch of which we had ſpent many hours; we were at length obliged to take up with the tendereſt branches of the trees for our ſupport, and then ſetting down on the further ſide of it to reſt ourſelves, we began to lament our want of water alſo, having ſeen not the leaſt ſign of any in all our walk.

From the verge of the wood we had thus paſſed, we ſaw another large one not

a quarter of a mile from us, with a ſharp valley between, very much over-run with buſhes, inſomuch, that we feared it would be difficult to paſs it; but ſtill by the ſituation of it, we were in hopes of water in the lower parts, and ſo indeed it happened; but we had a hard taſk to get at it; for the buſhes that grew thicker the nearer we approached to it, almoſt tore us to pieces in our paſſage.

This valley reached both ways as far as we could ſee, and was very full of ſhrubs, buſhes, and low trees; when we arrived at the bottom, we found a fine rill of water, very clear and ſweet; but the brambles and thorns had ſo intertwined each other on the banks, that we were near an hour clearing a way with our knives to come at it.

Our next difficulty was, how to get over it, for we reſolved to ſearch the wood on the other ſide, if poſſible, in hopes ſtill of finding ſomething eatable; but the banks were exceeding ſteep, and though the cut itſelf was not above ten or twelve yards wide, yet it being very much clogged with twigs and thorns, which the current had brought forward, and lodged amongſt the branches, that ſhot croſs from one ſide almoſt to the other of it, we were ap-

apprehenſive of a dangerous paſſage, eſpecially as we were unacquainted with the depth of the water; but in order to fathom it, we cut each of us a ſtrong ſtrait ſhoot from ſome of the trees, about twelve foot long, by the help of which, we made experiments to find out the moſt fordable places; and at length, having with much ado, forced our way through all oppoſition; at about one hundred yards above us, we came to a ſeeming ford, where we could viſibly diſcern, on the oppoſite ſhore, the traces and footſteps of beaſts, and by the number of them, and their ſeeming freſhneſs, were ſatisfied, that it muſt be a common entrance for the wild inhabitants of the country; this put us upon our guard for fear of a ſurpriſe, having as yet ſeen nothing that had conveyed the leaſt idea of danger to us.

We croſſed this common ford, at little above our knees in water, and being arrived on the other ſhore, held a counſel, what was beſt to be done, in caſe of any violence from the wild creatures, which we were now too ſenſible the neighbouring woods muſt abound with. We had no other weapon, either of offence or defence, than our long poles, which amongſt the trees would be unmanageable; and then,

ſhould we be aſſaulted, they being ſo long and cumberſome, we could expect but to give our adverſary one blow, before he would be upon us; at length, we agreed to ſharpen our poles at one end, very taper, that they might ſerve us to puſh, as well as to ſtrike with, which having done, and cut off about three foot from the length of each, we ſet forward, very circumſpectly to the wood, looking every way, and liſtening at the leaſt noiſe we heard.

We were not many paces from the wood, labouring through a thicket, when we heard a violent ſnort, (which to our terrified apprehenſions ſounded as loud as a cannon) not many poles from us; this made us ſtop as dead as a pointer on winding his game; but after liſtening for ſome minutes, without making the leaſt ſtir, and finding every thing about us quiet, our fears ſubſiding a little, we gently ſtepped forward again; but being forced to puſh ourſelves through the branches and buſhes that obſtructed our way, we could not ſtir a foot without making a great ruſtling. The firſt noiſe we made, produced a ſecond ſnort, to our thinking more dreadful than the firſt; this fixed us trembling to the ſpot like images; but again,

gain, all being huſh'd, we whiſpered very ſoftly to each other, that it would be to no purpoſe, to ſtand there encloſed in the underwood, which would render our arms uſeleſs, if we ſhould be attacked, and give us up at once a prey to our aſſailant; and then came to a reſolution, that as the wood was ſo very near us, where we plainly ſaw we ſhould have more room to put ourſelves upon the defenſive, we would at all hazards make a bold puſh to it, in ſpite of every oppoſition. With this reſolution, we ſprang forward, ſtruggling with all our might, till we came through the thicket to the wood, which we inſtantly gained: But from the moment we began to ſtir, our hairs ſtood an end on our heads, and our blood ran thro' us as cold as water, at hearing not only another ſnort, but ſuch a terrible hoarſe grumbling, that we expected nothing leſs, than ſome monſtrous lyon to oppoſe us in the wood; we inſtantly drew up upon our guard, facing the quarter from whence the ſound came, where we beheld a prodigious wild boar, ruſhing through the trees, about twenty paces below us, making the wood eccho with his grunting; but we ſtanding quite ſtill, with our ſticks pointing towards him, he trotted off at a

great rate through the cover, without turning to attack us.

We ſtood quite ſtill, till he was gone out of ſight, but could hear him much further than we could ſee him; nor could we collect our full ſpirits again for ſome time after; not doubting, but we ſhould be forced to encounter ſeveral of the ſame kind, if we were obliged to traverſe the woods for food. We ſearched very narrowly on every tree, but could ſee nothing like fruit thereon, or any thing to ſatisfy the demands of nature, the want of which ſupply, began to cauſe a great faintneſs in our bodies.

What could we do in this dilemma! die we muſt a lingering death, if we could find nothing, and nothing could be found without ſearch; neither was it at all more dangerous to meet wild beaſts in our travels, than to wait them where we were; who would as certainly range to the places we ſhould be in, as elſewhere: So that having death on the one hand certain, if we were idle; with a chance of a ſupply, as a reward for our diligence, (on the other hand) if we were active; we bruſhed on, referring ourſelves to providence for protection.

It

It muſt be allowed to be a melancholy ſituation that we were in, when we had ſpent the whole day to no manner of purpoſe, as to the main view of our travel; and not only ſo, but we were now ſo far withdrawn from the rivulet, that even that comfort was out of all proſpect of being attained till the next day: Thomas declared himſelf to be ſo far ſpent about ſun ſet, that he wiſhed with all his heart, he had been torn to pieces by the boar, rather than to ſuffer the rack of his preſent hopeleſs condition; and indeed, though I almoſt thought that we ſhould have met with a happy deliverance, if the boar had deſtroyed us both; yet I endeavoured to keep up the ſpirits of my companion, in the beſt manner I could, being aſcertained, that deſpair would bring us no relief.

We were now both ſitting among the trees, when I deſired Thomas to riſe, and to let us try to get through the wood before dark night; or at leaſt to ſearch out ſome large tree, wherein we might ſhelter us till morning; but he ſeemed ſo dejected, that he ſeriouſly told me, he thought me to blame for attempting to go any further; for he ſaid, what did another day of life ſignify to either of us? And for his part, if he could be but ſo happy

happy as to fall aſleep where he was, till ſome meſſenger of death ſhould diſpatch him, he ſhould think it preferable, even to an age of life, to be led in the miſery that then preſented to us in that country, tho' we ſhould meet with food ſufficient for us; for conſider, ſays he, we are excluded all human converſe, muſt live in perpetual terror of the creatures about us, or if we ſhould in our travels meet with any of the human ſpecies, we ſhall either become a prey to their neceſſities, or be reduced to be their ſlaves; now is it not better not to be at all, than be thus miſerable?

He had ſcarce ended his harangue, (which I muſt confeſs, I was ſo far from concluding to be void of all reaſon, that I was at a loſs how regularly to contradict it,) when not far from us, we heard the lowing of ſome cow or bull, as we thought; then hearing it again; come Thomas, ſays I, cheer up lad, we are nearer company than we thought for, here are inhabitants at hand, don't you hear their cattle? He told me, he imagined he did. I own, ſays he, if I thought there were any civilized people near us, I could ſhake off my melancholy, and be glad to meet them, notwithſtanding what has paſſed; then riſing, we both directed our ſteps to the quarter

the

the lowing came from; but had not paſſed far, before we perceived ourſelves ſorely diſappointed in our expectations; for the firſt object that preſented to us, was a prodigious fierce bull, whetting his horns againſt a large tree, bellowing and pawing with deſperate fury.

The part of the wood we were then in, being very plain at bottom, and free from underwood, and conſiſting only of very large trees, ſtanding at a tolerable diſtance from each other; we had but juſt time to regulate our conduct, (which was, that we would dodge him behind the trees, and by no means quit our ſtation, but keep to the ſame ſtand we firſt occupied) before he eſpied us: Then ſetting his tail erect, and ſhaking his head very terribly, he made full at us, who by this time, had taken our ſtand behind two ſeveral large trees: The firſt that he made at was Thomas, lowering his head to gore him; when he ſlipping behind the tree, the creature, with all the violence and malice imaginable, puſhed ſometimes on this, and again on that ſide; but ſtill as he changed his ſtation, Thomas changed his, myſelf ſtanding trembling for my companion, behind two large trunks, which had ſhot from one ſtem, and had left an open ſpace between.

I could very eaſily have climbed up one of the ſtems, and have ſecured myſelf in the branches, but did not know how ſoon there might be a neceſſity for my aſſiſting my comrade; for it was not without the exacteſt judgment that he had avoided the creature ſo long as he had; but at length, the beaſt being almoſt mad to be diſappointed of his aim, clapping his forehead againſt the tree, he ſeemed to ſtrive with all his force to overturn it; this Thomas perceiving, he ſtruck the ſharp point of his pole quite into the creature's eye. The anguiſh of the wound, enraged the bull ten times more if poſſible than before; and running backwards ſome paces, he reared up perpendicularly, bellowing, roaring, and pawing with his fore feet in the air; but in his return to the ground, (having turned his body about in his agitation,) he miſſed the ſight of Thomas, and made directly at me; I ſtanding and looking on between the two ſtems I have mentioned. On his approach, I retired behind one of the ſtems; but the beaſt having ſeen me between them, made a leap to come through; when his horn happening (on the blind ſide) to ſtrike againſt the tree, and thereby ſtopping the force of his leap, he fell ſhort between the two

ſtems,

ſtems, which growing cloſe toward the bottom, and opening wider the higher they roſe, caught him faſt in the cleft at the flank, ſo that he could neither draw his buttocks after him, or withdraw his fore part from it.

The rage of the brute at this accident was inexpreſſible; his fury even ſhook both the large trees from the foundation; but Thomas and I perceiving that all his ſtruggles would be fruitleſs, and that he had already torn a large gaſh in his flank, and would rather have borne the anguiſh of disjointing his hinder parts from the body, than have ceaſed from endeavouring his eſcape; we both came before him, in order to diſpatch him; when obſerving what a benefit the loſs of one eye had been to us, I directly ran my pole into the other; and then new ſharpening and tapering our poles, one of us on the right, and the other on the left ſide, ran them into his body, juſt below his ſhoulder bone, which preſently brought him to his knees, and killed him.

The fall of the beaſt gave us time to recruit our breath a little, and to recover from our fears: But I am almoſt aſhamed to ſay, that the beaſt was ſcarce breathleſs, before we had each of us devoured a part of

of him; though our preſſing neceſſities may be a reaſonable excuſe for us: For he had no ſooner fallen upon his knees, unable to renew his former efforts, than our knives were in his haunches, cutting ſlices to appeaſe our hunger; and though we had neither cook or ſeaſoning, I have often called it to mind, as the moſt excellent dainty, I ever taſted in my whole life.

After ſo ſeaſonable and elegant a refreſhment, we both began to conſider our lives at a much greater price than we had juſt before eſteemed them at, and that the preſervation of them was worth our future concern; wherefore we came to a reſolution, of lodging on the crown of ſome of the trees thereabouts, (where were ſeveral of them overgrown with a creeping plant, not unlike our ivy in nature, though different in leaf,) and were not long finding one of capacity to contain us both; upon this we mounted with each other's help; the body of it, though not very high, was yet of too enormous a bulk for us to graſp or ſwarm up; ſo that I mounting up on Thomas's back, and thereby reaching the branches, clambered up myſelf firſt, and then extending my arm to him, I drew him up to me.

The

The crown of the tree could not be leſs than five foot diameter, and was pretty near circular, covered over with a fine dry mould, which had been formed in length of time from the decayed leaves which had lodged there, and over that were innumerable fine tender ſhoots of the running plant, as full of leaves as poſſible; ſo that we lay as comfortable as on a down bed; and having both agreed to acquieſce in the abſence of water till morning, we fell into a ſound and delightful ſleep.

CHAP. IV.

Awaked by a herd of wild ſwine. Almoſt devoured with flies. Project of catching ſwine in a pit. Work hard at it. Catch a boar and pig. Kill the boar. Get fire to dreſs it.

AS we lay in the moſt ſerene compoſure that can be imagined, we were both awaked with a violent uproar of numberleſs, hoarſe, inarticulate voices and ſounds, which made the very wood ring; when ſtarting up on our backſides, (by the light of the moon, which then glimmered through the trees, and checquered the ground

ground beneath us,) we could diſcern a whole herd of ſwine, making a delicious meal upon our leavings, and all in full concert; beſides ſeveral other animals, whoſe ſhapes and ſizes, though we could not nicely diſtinguiſh, yet we ſaw ſufficient to aſſure us, that they were not of the ſwine kind. This muſick laſted till day break, when they ſeverally diſperſed themſelves; but moſt of them took their courſe ſtill further into the wood, and very few towards the ſide we had entered at.

Even this piece of intelligence, trifling as it may ſeem to the reader, was of the utmoſt conſequence to us, whoſe lives depended upon the meaſures we purſued. So ſoon as the coaſt was clear, and it was full day-light, we diſlodged from our retreat, and gained the ground again; when our firſt ſtep was, to ſee what the voracious company had left us; and indeed, they had loſt no time, for the head, ſhoulders, body, and entrails were clean gone, and the bones picked like a prepared ſkeleton, as were alſo the hinder legs, as far as they could reach, but the back part of the creature riſing very high, (for the feet would not reach the ground,) I may ſay, they had left beſt part of the two ſir-loins

and

and the broad part of the rumps; ſo that we had no great reaſon to complain, being in poſſeſſion of more than we could poſſibly conſume, while the weather, which was very hot, would ſuffer us to preſerve it from putrefaction; we therefore wiſhed them well with their meal, and cutting out the remaining fleſh from the bone as well as we could, we packed it up, and marched away with it to the rivulet, which we had croſſed the morning before; but ſure there never was ſuch a journey; for the ſun being very warm, we were peſtered with ſuch ſwarms of flies, and thoſe of ſuch enormous ſorts and ſizes, drawn together by the ſcent of the beef, that we could not ſee before us: If we attempted but to ſpeak, we had them in our mouths; they ſettled by whole handfuls on our faces and hands, and made ſuch a charm, that we could not hear each other. This inconvenience, (and leſt they ſhould fill our meat with maggots,) obliged us to take our handerchiefs from our necks, and tie the meat up in them; but in ſpite of all we could do, they ſwarmed ſo over us, that we had much ado to reach the rivulet; nor could we then diſcharge our bundles from them, but by dipping them in the water, in which we alſo ſoaked our hands,

and wetted our faces, to alleviate the ſmart they had occaſioned.

When we had drank and paſſed the rivulet, the flies beginning their old trade again, grew ſo intollerable, that we were not able to proceed further without ſome remedy; ſo there being great quantities of very long knot graſs, about the verges of the buſhes, we plucked up a large parcel of it, and putting it under our hats, let it hang over our faces and necks, and then wrapping our hands and bundles in the ſame, we proceeded with tolerable ſecurity; as for our legs, while we kept them in the buſhes, they were ſafe enough.

Having found the benefit of this long graſs, we encloſed all our meat in it, and placing it above the reach of any animal in a tree, we took each a ſlice in our pockets, and returned to our ſecond wood, intending to ſpend the enſuing night there in our old lodging; but we never paſſed or repaſſed the rivulet without drinking, whether we were thirſty or not. Now the reaſon why we removed our ſtore to the firſt wood was, that the ſcent of it might not entice the beaſts to accuſtom themſelves to our lodging place, and becauſe we had not obſerved any creature whatſoever in the firſt wood; and it was plain, the beaſts had

had never paſſed the rivulet; for though they had very much poached the ſide where they entered to drink, yet there not being a ſingle mark on the oppoſite ſhoar, it was reaſonable to believe, they had not uſually forded it.

On our return to the ſecond wood, we both ſat down near to the bones of the bull, and took a ſhort repaſt, entring into diſcourſe of our providential eſcape from, and the death of the creature, which had moſt certainly ſaved our lives; but then, conſidering with ourſelves, that our ſtock of proviſion, were it much larger, would not keep above three or four days, before it would almoſt poiſon us, we applied our thoughts to ſuch means, as might, if poſſible, procure us a ſucceſſion of victuals; otherwiſe, a little time muſt of courſe reduce us to ſtarving.

Whilſt we were on theſe reflections, Thomas taking up one of the bull's ſhoulder bones, ſays he, if we could but contrive to fix this in a handle, it would not be impoſſible to dig with it; and if we could but make a pit, we might catch an hog at any time. How ſo, ſays I? Why, ſays he, I have read of catching beaſts in pits, covered over with ſticks and earth upon them; but I am afraid, ſays he, it

won't do. I had never heard of ſuch a way before, but however, I ſoon perceived by a little what a great deal meant; nay, ſaid I, if it be but poſſible, we'll try, having nothing elſe to do; and if it is to be done, the ſooner the better.

We both ſeemed mighty alert to try our experiment, but did not conceive the labour it would be to compaſs it. We walked about firſt, to find a ſpot proper for our purpoſe, at no very great diſtance from our lodging, that we might be the readier at hand to kill any taken beaſt before it ſhould eſcape; and having pitched upon a place, we marked out the ground about ſix foot ſquare; then cutting half a dozen large handſpikes, about five foot long, we with an infinite labour ſharpened them, having no other inſtrument but our knives, and this concluded our firſt day.

In the night we again heard our ſwine, but being more uſed to them, they now became only our diverſion, and towards morning they marched off by the ſame routs they had taken the day before. We were early at our work to day, reſolving to make a good beginning before dinner; and having ſharpened all our handſpikes the laſt night, we began to drive them in by repeated blows with our own force only; but

but the ground was ſo hard we could make nothing of it, till cutting them about a foot long each; with the great thigh bones of the bull, we could drive them in, and looſen the ſurface of the ground very much: This work we purſued with great aſſiduity, ſo ſoon as we found it would do, ſhovelling out the crumbles with the two blade bones, and then by our ſtakes looſening another layer of earth, we ſcooped that out in the ſame manner; ſo that by noon we had got it about ſix inches deep, and then we croſſed the rivulet to dinner, which taking us up about two hours, we wrought at it again till bed time.

The next night we ſlept pretty quiet, there being but few ſwine near us, and they ſtaying but a little while, their food being entirely conſumed the night before. In the morning we went to work again, firſt new pointing our tools, and found we were likely to have a much eaſier day's work than before; for having with ſome difficulty removed another layer, the ground worked much freer and eaſier, the deeper we went; ſo that we ſunk it at leaſt a foot that day. The next morning was ſpent in ſpreading our earth to a greater diſtance, and upon our return to dinner, we perceived the ſwine had ſmelt our

beef, and had been after it, for we found a great deal of their dung under the tree, and many marks of their feet againſt the bark, and before we went to reſt, our hole was about two foot and half deep.

We were obliged to work for life next day, for our beef was now grown ſo ſtrong that we could ſcarce eat it; and riſing betimes, we ſunk our pit almoſt a foot and half. The fourth day we ſunk it almoſt two feet, and the next day we cut our ſticks to croſs it with, and in our return from dinner, brought with us two bundles of long graſs. This we ſcattered over the ſticks lightly, to keep up the crumbles, and ſpread that over with a thin ſurface of earth, ſo that our pit was now about ſeven feet deep from the new raiſed mould, which we had caſt out and ſpread round it; in the middle of this we ſtuck a pole, about four feet higher than the earth, and upon that pole our remaining beef; for we could now ſcarce endure the ſmell of it, and had taſted ſcarce any of it the two laſt days.

At dark we went to bed, (as I call it,) but had a very indifferent night of it; for long before morning we were ſurrounded with the rougheſt muſick that ever was heard, nor can it be compared to any

other noiſe: however, we reſted, in ſtrong aſſurance that day light would diſperſe our pipers, and pleaſed ourſelves with the proſpect of a good pork breakfaſt; but our diſappointment was very great, when inſtead of the multitudes diſperſing, their cries had collected treble the number there had been the night before; and though the ſun had half mounted to the zenith, there appeared no more ſign of the aſſembly's breaking up, than there was before day break; nor was there any thing to be heard or ſeen, from every point of our view, but freſh company trotting, whining, and flapping their ears, to join the chorus.

Seeing no proſpect of ſeizing our prey, nor being able to gueſs when we ſhould, we judged ourſelves now to be in the very worſt condition we had yet been in; for having drank nothing ſince the preceding noon, we were ready to periſh with thirſt; and to venture down, and expoſe ourſelves to the fury of the clamorous rout beneath us, was to clap a razor to our own throats: Again, as the evening was now approaching, we had little hopes of their leaving us, till the next morning at leaſt: But whilſt we were curſing our wayward fortune, Thomas riſing up, ſtretched him-

ſelf, and at the ſame time giving a loud yawn, in an inſtant every ear was pricked up to hear from whence that unuſual ſound came; and ſome of them ſpying his uplifted arms, as he was returning them to his ſides again; immediately one general ſnort iſſuing from the whole herd, each ſet up his tail and ran for life, with ſuch precipitation, ſome one way, ſome another, that in three minutes, there was neither a beaſt to be heard or ſeen through the whole wood.

We waited ſome time in expectation of their return, before we deſcended, and now hearing no noiſe in the pit, imagined that what we had taken muſt have eſcaped with the reſt, or it would not have been ſo ſilent. We took our long pointed poles in our hands, and each of us two ſhorter, and marched ſoftly to the pit, where upon our approach we ſaw a ſwinging old boar, ſitting on his breech, with his mouth all of a white foam, and ſo weary with leaping to get out, that he could not raiſe his hinder parts; and by him, with its head under the boar's breech, a young ſhoot of about a quarter, or four months old, ſtark dead. The beaſt ground his teeth, and ſtaring horribly at us, attempted to riſe, but was unable, which we obſerving,

ſtruck

ſtruck the points of our long poles with all our force againſt his ſides to diſpatch him; but they made no more paſſage than if they had been forced againſt a ſtone wall; then taking up one of the ſharpened handſpikes, I with all my force ſwung it downwards to dart him, and this entering about his flank, pinned him to the ground; then with the but end of two others, Thomas and I ſo plyed him on the head, that we ſoon diſpatched him; one of us then went down, and cut a quarter of the ſhoot off, with which we marched to the rivulet, for our thirſt was too great to permit us to eat till we had allayed it; which having done, we made a hearty meal of it, threw the reſt into the water, and returned to our lodging, not doubting but the run-away ſwine would return and annoy us in the night; but it happened quite otherwiſe, for we heard no more of them till our remaining pork ſtank; and after that we never wanted proviſion for a great while.

Hearing nothing of the herd that night, we were very early at the pit in the morning, and took out the remainder of the ſhoot, which was as much as we could ſpend while it would be ſweet; when having ſuch plenty before us, and not being

then very hungry, our palates grew nicer than they had before been; ſo that we bewailed ourſelves very much for the want of fire, which, if we could but have been able to procure, we thought we ſhould have been compleatly happy; for that it might not only ſerve us for the purpoſe of dreſſing our victuals, but might be a means of driving any noxious beaſt from us. A ſupply for this want dwelt very much on our minds; when the ſun being now exceſſive hot, I bethought myſelf of an old pair of ſpectacles, I had had in my breeches pocket every ſince I left Royſton, and which I frequently wore at the finiſhing of any nice work. Thomas, ſays I, I have got fire in my pocket; ſo have I, ſays he, but we ſhall never make a blaze with it; (thinking I meant my knife, with which we had often ſtruck fire before, but not forcibly enough to catch on any thing we had applied it to:) Yes, ſays I, you ſhall ſee I have, if you will give me a piece of your ſhirt. Make your words good, ſays he, you ſhall have it all, rather than fail; and upon my aſſuring him I would, he cut off a piece about as big as a card. We then went to a little ſpot, where an opening of the trees let in the ſun, and pulling out my ſpectacles, I ſet the

the rag on fire directly: Thomas ran and hugged me; O! Jack, ſays he, now we are happy. I immediately put it out again with my hand, till we were prepared with combuſtibles for raiſing a proper pile, which we both went in queſt of, and could not be long to ſeek for in a wood; then heaping up ſome very dry ſmall ſtuff and leaves, and diſpoſing larger wood over it, we lighted the rag again, and ſoon produced what we thought we muſt for ever have wiſhed for in vain. We had no ſooner burnt our wood to embers, than broiling ſome of our pig, we made a moſt delicious meal of it, and were now, (thro' our ſucceſs) grown ſo dainty, that truly we thought it a difficulty to go, it may be, two furlongs every time for drink when we wanted it; this Thomas complaining of, I told him, he ſhould conſider, that though we were lords of the country, yet we had no ſubjects, and conſequently ſhould not think much of helping ourſelves: Pox of ſubjects, ſays he, I want none; if I had but a good large bottle to bring up my water in, it is all I deſire. Well, lad, ſays I, come, as I have already procured you fire, I'll endeavour to ſtand your friend in the water affair too, come along with me.

CHAP. V.

Make buckets of the boar's ſkin. Make thread of the guts. Feed a year on hog meat. Take a progreſs. Are ſtopt by wild cattle. Find nuts. Aſcend a mountain. Diſcover they are on an iſland. Know not what part of the world they are in. Set their pit trap. Catch a calf. Durſt not come out of their tree for three days. Venture to their pit. Are frighted. Kill a cow. Take the calf. Reflections on the cow's tenderneſs to her calf. Find ſalt.

IN all our operations, though I had obſerved my friend Thomas to be very ſlack of invention, yet no body could be more ready at the execution of any project I put him upon; and this himſelf perceiving, in every thing gave my judgment the preference; ſaying, come, if you think it will do, I'll follow your directions; neither was this ſeeming ſubordination of opinion of the leaſt diſſervice to our affairs;

fairs; for by that means, there never aroſe the leaſt diſagreement between us, he being but as one of the hands, that were ſubſervient to my head.

But to proceed, we went into the pit, when I ordered him to cut the boar in two juſt at the loins, and then we cut off one leg and thigh, and a vaſt one it was, even as much as we could both well lift, at arms length, to the verge of the pit; we then lifted up the other alſo, and laid by it; we then ript up the body, and took out all the ſmall guts, which I bidding Thomas lay carefully by themſelves, he wondered, he ſaid, what I was under ſuch concern about them for, as he was ſure we had ten times more good meat than we could eat, whilſt it would keep ſweet. Never mind, ſays I, you ſhall ſee the uſe of them hereafter. When we had properly diſpoſed of the haunches, and guts, we cut the remainder into portable pieces, with great difficulty, and threw it out; then cleaning the bottom of the pit, left it open to ſweeten.

The next thing we did, was to flea the ſkin off the hams, beginning at the largeſt end, and turning it down quite round as we proceeded, till we came to the hock bone, and then we cut it off; ſo that when we had ſtuffed and dried the ſkin, to

its proper dimenſions, by tying up the lower ſmall end, we had a veſſel which would contain and carry full two gallons of water without ſpilling.

Having ſerved the other leg in the ſame manner, we bundled up the guts, and turning them, waſhed them heartily at the rivulet, then drawing them out at length, we began to twiſt them for drying, I intending them to ſupply the place of thread; but I found, upon my firſt experiment, that they would be too thick and ſtubborn for common uſes; however, before it was quite dry, I tied up both the lower ends of my leather bottles, (as I ſhall now call them,) and making a handle to each, of the ſame materials, in about a week's time, they were, by the heat of the country, as hard and ſtrong as a bucket, and from that time we never wanted water, either for drinking, or any other neceſſary uſe, without the trouble of going upon every ſeparate occaſion to the rivulet.

The next creature we killed was a young ſow, her we ſkinned entire, and then waſhing and cutting the guts into long ſtrips, we twiſted and dryed them into a ſpecial cat gut thread, which was very uſeful.

Thus

Thus we went on for above a year, till we had a vaſt quantity of leather hanging all about the wood, beſides abundance of utenſils which we had made of it, and had ſoled our ſhoes frequently with it; for having obſerved a long prickly thorn, which was very hard, ſharp, and tough when dry; we cut the ſhape of the ſoles out in the wet hides, and making our ſewing holes in it, they were then ready for uſe, upon juſt opening the holes a little before we wrought them; and indeed, the ſoleing our ſhoes was of infinite comfort to us.

Having brought all our affairs into ſome regularity, we were very deſirous of informing ourſelves, whether there might never be a proſpect of communicating with mankind again; and for that purpoſe, determined to travel to ſome diſtant parts of the country, for ſo long a ſpace as the victuals and water we could carry with us would hold ſweet; and it being now the cooleſt part of the year, we ſet out, in order to go through the wood we had lodged in, obſerving that courſe to lie inland from the ſea. When we came to the further ſkirt of it, we beheld a beautiful ſavannah before us, with a great number of wild cows and bulls in it, which gave a ſudden check to our progreſs: For about

a mile on the other ſide of it, there roſe another very tall wood, which though we wanted much to arrive at, yet we durſt not venture croſs the plain to come at it; and then, what further put a ſtop to us was, a broad water that run winding thro' it, ſo far as we could ſee; but upon our nearer approach to the outward trees, we obſerved, that the wood we were in, and the other beyond the ſavannah, had a communication at the head of the ſavannah, about a quarter of a mile to our right; this gave us ſome hope; and moving that way through the trees, we encompaſſed the plain, and entered the wood on the other ſide, which we traverſed in about two hours, and arrived at a vaſt opening, which extended ſome miles round, and was as full of buſhes, ſhrubs, and thorns, as the firſt valley was. In the middle, or rather towards the eaſtern part of this opening, was a prodigious high and bare mountain, which ſeemed to run croſs the whole plain; thither we inclined to paſs, but the badneſs of the way, rendered it exceeding difficult and laborious to us.

We had found abundance of nuts, or maſt, being only covered with a huſk, ſomewhat larger than an acorn, in the further part of the wood, and the trees were covered

vered with a ſort of dove, or ſmall pigeon, which we perceived were feeding upon them; the ſight of which induced us freely to make the experiment ourſelves, when we found them very palatable, but a little bitteriſh; they grew chiefly towards the tops of the branches, (which were very lofty) where the tender ſhoots had the freedom of the air; but the birds had beaten ſo many of them down, that we were at no loſs to find plenty, and this change of diet gave us no ſmall pleaſure.

Having filled all our pockets with theſe, we ſet forward for the mountain, which in ſome places we were obliged to wind about a long way, before we could aſcend, it lying ſo broken and ſteep; but at laſt we conquered it, and taking a proſpect every way, we could obſerve the ſea all round us, ſave to the north, where we could not in our preſent ſituation overlook the further end of the mountain: However, about an hour's walk more upon the ridge of it, brought us to that, where we plainly then perceived, that the land we inhabited was an iſland, which to our apprehenſions might be about ten miles over, the way we came, and might be the tranſverſe way, near as long again; and wherever there was any large ſavannah, or plain, we were ſure

ſure to ſee a river, or brook running along it.

The proſpect we enjoyed upon this mountain, inviting our eyes longer than we had purpoſed to ſtay there, we could not poſſibly reach our old lodging by daylight, and therefore determined to lye that night upon the mountain; when having found a ſnug hollow, we both ſlept very agreeably, and being now (over and above our ſtore of fleſh which we carried ſewed up in a ſkin,) ſupplied with ſo large a quantity of the nuts, we were not ſo ſollicitous for returning, as we otherwiſe muſt have been; ſo that the next morning paſſing down the northern end of the mountain, we arrived in an hour's march to the ſea ſhore.

Here we ſupplied ourſelves with divers kinds of ſhell fiſh, which we roaſted, and eat very greedily, they being a novelty to us, and ſurveyed ſeveral miles of the coaſt; but neither here or on the mountain, could behold any thing like land all round us, but the ſmall ſpot we were upon; nor could we ſee any ſign of a veſſel, or give the leaſt gueſs where we were; being neither of us ſupplied with ſufficient ſeafaring obſervations.

Having ſpent two or three days upon the coaſt, and the fiſh growing leſs and

leſs

leſs agreeable to us, (for we had thrown our pork into the ſea, it ſtank ſo) we reſolved to return home; (as we called it,) and when we had aſcended the mountain again, began to form a deſign of eſtabliſhing there a place for a ſignal, in caſe we ſhould happen to ſee any veſſel paſſing by us; for we were now perſuaded there were no inhabitants in the iſland, and could form no proſpect of relief, but from what we might providentially obſerve, from the height of the mountain; ſo chooſing an agreeable ſpot for the purpoſe, we reſolved to return to it, when we had received a freſh ſupply, and to ſpend our time between that and our lodging, which were almoſt half a day's journey from each other.

Upon our arrival, we covered our pit, in hopes of getting ſome more pork, tho' we had nothing to bait our pole with, for all the fleſh we had left behind us was clean gone, and even the bones removed; but we thought, that if the ſwine ſhould prowl that way by accident, ſome one might be taken in our trap; for we never failed, when we had any ſtinking thing to draw them with. We then mounted on our tree, and went to ſleep; but had not lain long, before we were rouſed by the violent

lent bleating of a calf, which having attended to for ſome time, we heard a lowing of cattle, from all quarters of the woods quite round us, and ſoon after were gathered together, the whole forces of the iſland, I believe; for by the moonlight, we could ſee an exceſſive number of them; they ran, they fought, they lowed, and bellowed with ſuch hideous din, and clattering of their horns, that nothing could poſſibly have the appearance of greater horror; neither did they at all diſperſe upon the return of the light.

It is true, we were ſafe where we were, and what added to our comfort was, that we were in no want of proviſion, having filled all our pockets again, at our return from the mountain with nuts, and had yet water hanging by us in our ſkin bottles; but then the uncertainty of our deliverance from theſe turbulent and dangerous creatures, gave us inexpreſſible diſquiet. In ſhort, they paſſed the next night, and part of the ſecond day in the ſame unruly exerciſes; ſo that we were forced to enter upon ſhort allowance of water, and had come to a determination either to remove our lodging, (if ever we eſcaped ſafe) further from our pit, or to provide a new pit further from our lodging; which latter

ſeemed

ſeemed moſt likely; for in all our walks, we had obſerved no tree to compare with what we had ſelected.

In ſhort, towards the ſecond evening, they began to diſperſe a little, the calf by that time bleating very ſparingly, and by dark there remained but very few of them, and they, all ſeemed upon their departure, except one cow, which we took to be the mother of the calf, for we were now ſure it muſt be a calf that was trapped; becauſe though we could not ſee, we could now and then hear it, and that much plainer ſince the diſperſion of the multitude: However, as the cow ſtill remained, we could not think of venturing down, even the third morning; not doubting but as ſhe was the party concerned, her rage would not be reſtrained from attacking us.

It was now the third night that we had been in the tree, and hearing nothing of them when we awaked before day-light, we were in great hopes, that the cow being now gone, we ſhould have the calf for our trouble; but on the approach of day, we ſaw the cow ſtretched along by the ſide of the pit, as we thought quite dead; this was joy indeed to us, and we made no more words of it, but leaping from the

the tree, ran towards the pit, with our ſpike poles in our hands: But how terribly were we ſhocked in our march, at the motion of one of the cow's ears, which gave two or three briſk flaps; we ſtood like poſts, neither daring to approach or fly; till ſtepping gently backwards a few paces, and not ſeeing her riſe, we both turned tail, and ran furiouſly towards the water, hoping that if we could reach the buſhes, we ſhould avoid her. Our fright, and expecting her at our heels, had prevented our looking behind us, till we judged we were in a place of ſafety; and then liſtening for a good while, and perceiving nothing to ſtir, or make the leaſt noiſe, we condemned each other for our cauſeleſs fear; though we could both have ſworn, all the way we went, that we had heard her juſt behind us: Rejoicing to find things no worſe, we ſtepped down to the rivulet, and drinking a hearty ſwig of water, returned to the wood; but with great caution and circumſpection. We entered it now lower to our left, and ſo came as it were beyond the pit, where we ſtill ſaw the cow in her prior poſition; but knowing that ſhe was not dead by our former experiment, we were afraid of venturing too near her; and then, having dropped

our

our ſpike poles, when we ran away, we had no defence without them; neither could we come at them, but in the very ſight of the beaſt.

Theſe thoughts agitated us very much, and gave us a deep concern; but that we might act with caution, I told Thomas, that I would go round to the poles, and if the beaſt roſe and made at me, I could but be in the caſe we were in at firſt with the bull, and I would try to gain my divided tree, where perhaps we might ſerve her as we had done him. Thomas ſaid, if I went he would; ſo we both advanced, and poſſeſſed ourſelves of the poles; when viewing the creature, and obſerving, that though ſhe ſaw us, yet ſhe did not raiſe her head, which then lay quite extended; I told Thomas I would go to her, for we could not always remain in this uncertainty. I found him ready to ſecond me, but reſolving not to act raſhly, I went round a little towards her hinder parts, when perceiving her ordure to come involuntarily from her, Thomas, ſays I, ſhe will never riſe more; fear nothing, let us both proceed, and dart her together.

We need not (as we ſoon found) have been in ſuch fear, for the creature was paſt

paſt riſing, and two or three ſtrokes of our ſpikes diſpatched her; now my great concern was for the calf, which lay dying alſo in the pit. I took my hat, and whilſt the cow was yet warm, I milked her into it, near a quart; then deſcending into the pit, I dipped my hand into it, and rubbed the calf's noſe and mouth, and lifting up her head, I poured about a ſpoonful into her jaws, and let it lie till it purged out again by degrees; then calling Thomas, I made him hold the calf's mouth open, with its head up, and poured in half a pint, moving and ſhaking the gullet, till opening her eyes, ſhe gave a gulp, and ſwallowed it.

I ſtayed a little longer, and then gave her the like doſe, which, with the like difficulty, ſhe again ſwallowing, I ſet down my hat, and taking off Thomas's, I tried what I could do, to procure ſome more from the cow, but her udder by this time growing ſtiffiſh, I could, with great difficulty, obtain ſcarce half a pint.

I then returned to my calf again, and at ſeveral repeated tryals, got down my whole hat full of milk; when laying my hat crown upwards, I placed the calf's head gently upon it, and got out of the pit to make the beſt of the cow, whoſe throat I now

how cut; but the blood was chilled too much to flow, and I muſt own, that although the death of the beaſt was the preſervation of us, yet, I could not help being very melancholy, to reflect upon the tenderneſs of the brute to her young, rather perſevering to death, than deſerting it: In the midſt of theſe thoughts, looking down upon Thomas, his head was bowed over the calf's, whilſt he was rubbing and chafing its limbs very tenderly; and though I ſpoke two or three times to him to come to me, he never lifted up his head, or returned me an anſwer; this I wondering at, and more narrowly obſerving him, perceived the tears to trickle down his face in great abundance. The ſight of this moved me too much to permit me to blame him; ſo letting him go on, I proceeded to ſkin ſome part of the beaſt for our dinners, and carrying it to the fire place, I got it ready, and then called him. I obſerved the poor fellow to wipe his eyes ſeveral times as he came to me; when he was ſat down, I aſked him how the calf did; he told me, (with great ſeeming ſatisfaction,) that he hoped he ſhould raiſe it, for that it was grown much better; I replied, ſmiling, one would think, Thomas, this calf and you were relations,

by your concern for her, for I perceived you wept over it. It may be a weakneſs in me, ſaid he, I own; but I confeſs I did, and can ſcarce refrain from it now, when I conſider the poor mother's love, in yielding up herſelf a ſacrifice, to the misfortune of her young helpleſs calf; but then to reflect, that even when dead, ſhe contributed that nouriſhment to the poor little creature, which I ſtill hope will add years to its being, that circumſtance moved my paſſions exceedingly.

I never conceived a truer love for any one in my life, than this notion of my companion's compaſſion gave me for him; and far from charging it with any thing unmanly, I looked upon human nature in a more exalted view, from this example, both for its capacity, and will of commiſeration for its fellow creature; and the idea of Thomas's gentle diſpoſition, had given me ſuch a good opinion of him, that nothing but a diſcovery I made ſome months after, could have heightened.

But to return to my narration, we having dined, Thomas told me, he would go look after the poor little calf again, and I went with him, when we found the creature lying upon its belly, with its legs under it, in an eaſy manner, and with its head

head looking very briſk and upright. We judged it to be about ſix months old, and upon our offering to get down to it, up it ſtarted, and made us ſenſible of the wildneſs of its nature; for it bounded about, round and round the pit, making ſeveral fruitleſs offers to leap out. Thomas ſaid, he was reſolved to try and tame it, which I was not againſt; but told him, if we attempted any ſuch thing, it muſt be by hunger and ſtrait confinement; wherefore I propoſed giving it nothing more that night, but for us both to jump into the pit, and tie its legs, ſo that it could not riſe to hurt us, and then to let it eat nothing for ſome time, but what it received immediately from our hands.

We conſulted ſeveral other methods of management; but I inſiſting on tying its legs, and hampering its head, before it got ſo much ſtrength as to become more miſchievous, we deſcended the pit, and having avoided ſome of its puſhes, we hampered her ſo well, that we could do what we pleaſed with her. Thomas then cut an armful of graſs and carried it, with a bottle of water; but though ſhe did not ſhew any regard for the graſs at firſt, ſeeming too fearful to taſte it; yet upon being offered the water, ſhe clapped her noſe to it,

it, and drank it all up, as far as ſhe could follow it with her head, whiſking her tail, and ſeeming highly delighted; and though Thomas ſtroked his hand over her body moſt part of the time, ſhe would not withdraw her noſe from it.

She had no ſooner done drinking, than ſhe fell to the graſs and made a good meal of it, Thomas ſtanding by and ſerving her all the time; and in three or four days more, being kept from the other beaſts, and only ſeeing us, ſhe became ſo familiar, as to follow us round the pit for graſs or water, and in leſs than a month, ſhe would go through the wood with us to the mountain, and ſuffer herſelf to be led about like a dog by us in a halter, of which we had by this time good ſtore, from the thickneſs of my thumb to the fineneſs of a twine packthread, made from the guts we had dried.

The next morning after the death of the cow, and captivity of the calf, we fed it well very early, and then took a walk to the ſhore we were caſt upon; where ſauntering about an hour on the ſtrand, we aſcended a ſmall rough rock that jutted into the ſea, it may be a hundred yards. We went to the point of it, and ſitting down, were reflecting upon the alteration of our preſent

preſent condition, from what it was on our being caſt on the ſhore about two years before; and while we were thinking, and ſcrabbling with our hands upon the duſt that lay in the roughneſs of the rock, I putting my finger (on ſome account) to my mouth, cried out, Thomas, I have found ſalt. That were a find indeed, ſays he; but I inſiſting upon it, clapped ſome of the duſt between my fingers to his mouth, when we both agreed, that it was a very good and ſharp ſalt: We then took a pinch to palate again more narrowly, but upon ſucking and chewing it, found it to be very gritty and full of ſand; this was ſome diſcouragement, but having found the thing we ſo long wanted, we deſpaired not of rendering it profitable to us. We then followed our ſearch over the whole rock, and in ſome places, where there were large hollows, which the ſea often waſhed over, we found great quantities, even buſhels in a place.

This lucky accident made us ſo alert, that (reſolved not to return empty,) we filled as much as our jackets would hold, and carried home with us. This ſalt, where it lay thick, was very good, and free from grit; ſo that we no ſooner arrived, than we not only fell to work with

the fleſh we had cut from the cow, and caſed that up in our leathern cupboards, but we cut alſo a vaſt quantity, ſufficient to fill ſeveral ſkins. In ſhort, we ſpent all our ſalt, and fetching a great parcel more the next day, in a large ſkin, which we ſlung upon a pole, and carried between us; with that, we ſalted up as much as we could eat in ſix weeks or two months at leaſt.

CHAP. VI.

Pickle their meat in ſkins and hang it in the trees. Build a booth on the mountain. Looſes Thomas. Finds him ſpeechleſs. Thomas will not diſcover his hurt. Daniel inſiſts on aſſiſting him. Thomas diſcovers that ſhe is a Woman. Daniel relieves her. His reflection. Watches her all night.

BEING thus provided with a ſtanding ſupply, we ſewed it up in our ſkins to keep it from the flies, and hanging them in the trees, and daily thruſting freſh ſalt into the hole we left for that purpoſe,

poſe, and ſtopped with graſs, we always kept the ſkins running over with brine; and then, ſo ſoon as our calf was gentle enough to be led by us in a halter, we went to the mountain, carrying the cow's ſkin with us; where erecting ſeveral poles on the moſt conſpicuous point, to them we fixed the hide extended, with the tail hanging downwards, which being on ſuch an eminence, might be ſeen with a good glaſs ſeveral leagues at ſea.

The mountain being ſo very much expoſed to the ſun, we reſolved to build a ſort of booth, on a convenient nook we had found, to ſhelter us from the heat; and though it appeared to be a laborious undertaking, at the diſtance we were from the woods; yet by conſtant application, in a week's time, we had covered it in with ſhady ever-greens of a large leaf; but ſtill wanting a turn or two more to compleat the work, (for we alternately one fetched the wood, and the other wrought at the booth) Thomas having been gone for his turn of wood much longer than uſual, and I having wrought up all that I had with me, began to be in great concern for him, for fear of ſome accident; I waited in expectation of his return, till my impatience would not ſuffer me to continue any lon-

ger in ſuſpence ; I took the ſame way down the mountain, that I had ſeen him take, calling and hollowing all the way I went, for him to hear me, but received no anſwer ; I then entered the wood, and had not paſſed far in it, before I beheld poor Thomas, to my thinking, ſtark dead, lying on his back ; my concern then preſſing me forward, I fell upon his face and kiſſed him. I perceived he was alive indeed, though unable to ſpeak or cry out for pain ; neither could he raiſe himſelf forward to ſit up in the leaſt ; when I went to lift him up upon his ſeat, he ſcreamed enough to pierce one's heart ; but I could by no means collect from him, the cauſe of his diſaſter ; all that I could get out was, Let me die, let my lie and die here.

My reader muſt be ſatisfied, from what he has already heard, that theſe words of my ſole companion, (for whom, and for whoſe good qualities and perſonal merit I had the higheſt eſteem) muſt cut me to the very ſoul ; eſpecially being ignorant of the cauſe. I begged him over and over, to ſhew me, or ſignify where and how he was hurt, but could get nothing from him relating to it ; which making me outrageous, I declared he ſhould not die, if I could

could prevent it; and ſuppoſing he had broke a rib, or run his knife into himſelf, or ſome ſuch thing; I began to ſtrip up his jacket, inſiſting upon finding out the cauſe myſelf, rather than ſuffer him to lie in ſuch agony; but he ſtopped me, by deſiring I would lift hard under his ſhoulders behind and raiſe him on his legs; I lifted with all my force, when keeping his body extended ſtiff, he raiſed up on his feet, but could not then ſtand without ſupport, he was in ſuch miſery; yet all he would ſay was, O! that he was but at the booth; O! that he had but died outright.

It was a full mile and half to the booth, but I told him, ſince he was ſo deſirous of reaching it, if my ſtrength would any ways hold out, I would carry him thither. He was in too much pain for me to expect regular replies to what I ſaid, ſo having collected his inclination from what had paſſed, I took his arms croſs my neck, and made a puſh with him, ſo far as ever my ſtrength and wind would permit; when, perceiving it was a job not eaſily to be compaſſed; and as moſt of the way we had now to go was a ſteep up-hill; I told him, my fears were, that I ſhould not be able to carry him thither; for that he hanging only by his arms round my

neck, drew twice the weight as mounting on my back would do; but that if he could riſe high enough on my hips, to ſuffer my hands under his thighs, I would engage to climb the hill with him. He told me, his pain was too intollerable to permit him to do it; and again, begged me to lay him down, and leave him to die by himſelf. His repeating that requeſt, and not giving me the leaſt inſight into his diſorder, threw me into ſo violent a rage, that I ſwore I would ſtrip him ſtark naked, but I would diſcover his hurt; for I could no longer bear the torture of my own mind till I knew it.

He ſeeing me in ſuch a deſperate fury, told me, that ſince I would not permit him to die in peace, (though he ſhould be ſorry to leave me,) he found himſelf under an abſolute neceſſity of revealing to me a ſecret, he would willingly have ever concealed from me. Tell me of no ſecrets, ſays I, but let me know what I may beſt perform for your ſervice, and to give you ſome help and aſſiſtance; for it is even bitterer than death itſelf to me, to ſee you thus and not know the cauſe, or which way to apply a remedy. Oh! Jack, ſays he, whilſt I was cutting a bough, I ſlipped from the tree, and fell upon a doated ſnag,

ſnag, which has penetrated my groin, and by the pain it gives me, I believe is broken into it. Come, come, ſays I, let me ſee immediately, that I may extract it, (if it be,) or apply ſome healing thing to cure you; what occaſion was there for making this ſo mighty a ſecret? Dear Jack, ſays he, you muſt know all, I am a woman, and had rather now you know it too, to ſuffer death, than to expoſe myſelf to you. I grew almoſt mad at her dallying, and giving her a curſe; what if you are a devil, ſays I, muſt you die for want of help, becauſe I am not ſo too? So I laid her all along, and found that a piece of ſharp wood, as thick as a truncheon, at the larger end had penetrated the rim of her belly, near the groin, and was broken off, rather within the ſkin; upon which, I took out my knife, and thruſting down the fleſh on that ſide where it was moſt buried, I fixed the point into the wood, and then clapping my thumb nail to the oppoſite ſide, which roſe above the fleſh a little, I pulled with all my ſtrength, even till I ſweated, before I could make it ſtir, (for I was in terrible fear leſt my knife ſhould ſlip, though I did not hint it to her,) and at laſt out it came. God bleſs

you, ſays ſhe; Oh! what relief have you given me.

I ſaid but little in reply; but covering the wound with her ſhirt, I gently removed the blood from the point of the ſtick, to ſee, if I could from thence diſcern, whether any part of it was left behind; but apprehending there was not, I ſoaked up the blood, and taking off my handkerchief, I clapped it to the wound, as well to ſtaunch the bleeding, as to keep out the air, till I had conſidered what to apply to it. I then ran and picked up a handful of the moſt ſucculent plants I I could find, and chewing them, till they were quite worked up to a maſh with my ſpittle, I filled the wound with them, and making a bandage with my handkerchief, tied it ſafe on.

My compaſſion had never before met with ſo deſerving an object to work upon, and conſequently I had never before felt it in ſo great exceſs; for though the wound was very large and dangerous, yet I was more moved at the confuſion and diſtreſs of my patient, upon the firſt ſight of me, after the operation was over, than at that; and it raiſed infinite reflections in my own mind, of what had frequently happened between us, whilſt I remained ignorant

ignorant of her ſex; but I was intirely to ſeek for the cauſe, why no part of her behaviour had ever before diſtinguiſhed her to me for what ſhe was; when it was now impoſſible (by any force ſhe could, to my thinking, put upon herſelf,) for her to conceal it from me in the leaſt geſture or action. I knew not where to divide between her preſent and paſt actions, or to ſeperate the manly from the womanly part of them; but yet, as ſhe had neither ſaid or done any thing unmanly before, ſo in my judgment, ſhe neither did or ſaid any thing manly now; from whence I naturally judged, that what we take things to be, that they certainly are, as to us; and that the diſtinction rather lies in our own true or falſe judgment, than in the objects themſelves.

I have declared how agreeable a companion ſhe was always to me as a man; we never had the leaſt difference, or diſagreement between us; and it may be eaſily imagined, that ſhe was not leſs ſo, ſince the late occurrence. The friendly regard I had for her before, being now exaſperated into extravagant love, which I neither could, or endeavoured to conceal; and in order to remove her baſhfulneſs, at my proceeding in her cure, I plainly told

her, that I loved her, and as I had no occaſion in our preſent circumſtances to fear a rival, I was in hopes, from the conſideration of her paſt behaviour, that I was not diſagreeable to her; and that, as it would be very hard, if we two, where there were no other choice, ſhould not, from meer neceſſity, engage ourſelves to each other, when ſhe was well again; ſo I could ſee no reaſon for us in the mean time to uſe any ſhyneſs, till that happy moment arrived; and that what had happened, ought to be ſo far from giving her any real uneaſineſs, that I hoped we ſhould both ſoon have cauſe to praiſe providence, for cementing by that means, the good harmony which had ſo long ſubſiſted between us, by an inſeparable union both of perſons and affections.

My mild and loving diſcourſe to her, though ſhe was not inſenſible of the intrinſick truth it contained, could not however abſolutely ſubdue her virgin reſervedneſs; and truly, I believe, (notwithſtanding the freedoms that had been between us, and that the way of life ſhe had entered into, might not indicate any great delicacy of ſentiments in her,) that there never was a more valuable, or modeſt woman, when ſhe appeared to be ſo; not that I can upon

upon recollection, charge her, as a man, with the leaſt indecent word or behaviour whatſoever.

It began now to be time to look about us, and conſider where we ſhould pitch our tent, for the day ſhut in a-pace. I aſked her, how ſhe found herſelf after her dreſſing, and told her, that as I believed ſhe would not be able to ſhift her ſtation, if ſhe pleaſed, I would watch by her while ſhe ſlept, for fear of any ſurpriſe by the cattle. She thanked me, and ſaid, ſhe was at preſent pure eaſy, and believed ſhe might be able to walk a little way, if there was any place near, that I ſhould judge ſafer than where we were. I was very glad to hear her ſay ſo, and lending her my hand to riſe, ſhe ſeemed to move in tolerable ſatisfaction, but I would not ſuffer her to exerciſe much, (though ſhe hinted, as if ſhe could walk to the booth,) for I was very fearful of inflaming the wound; ſo I led her to a brake of buſhes and trees, laying her down on the moſt convenient part within ſide, and then ſtepped away to water our calf and remove its tedder, which I did at a large diſtance from us, leſt the wild ones perchance hearing it, ſhould give us more than we coveted of their company.

CHAP. VII.

Difference of behaviour between them. Draws her to the booth. Lays her to reſt. Recovers. Daniel courts her. Her objections. He overcomes them. Their marriage ceremony.

HAD my reader but been an inviſible ſpectator of our actions, looks, ſpeech, and behaviour to each other, ſince the late diſcovery I had made, he would have ſmiled; not only to have ſeen me, (who had before been dictator in our little commonwealth,) now ſubmiſſively requiring a token of conſent, and approbation to each purpoſe, before I ſet about it: But from Thomas and Jack, the ſole appellations we were diſtinguiſhed by, to have heard nothing now but Mr. Daniel, and my dear, at every turn; and to have obſerved the circumſpection each uſed in their behaviour, leſt the leaſt word or action ſhould give the other offence; could he but have ſeen me, from a rough caſt fellow but few hours before, now aſſuming the airs of a poliſhed

poliſhed gentleman; and her, converted from an idle ſpectator of my actions, to ſoothing and ogling me betwixt ſhame and fear; me, who uſed at our repoſe, to lay myſelf careleſsly cheek by joul by her; now keeping my diſtance, and cautiouſly avoiding the leaſt annoyance to her; and her, ſeeming deſirous of, and ready to indulge my nearer approach; but ſubmitting to ſuch diſtance as I pleaſed to obſerve: I ſay, could my reader have ſeen the ceremonies we uſed to each other, he would never have ſuſpected us for the ſame pair, he had been acquainted with before; but yet, had he been able to have penetrated our boſoms, he would have there eſpied far greater differences, than our actions were capable of exhibiting.

I inſiſting upon watching her, after abundance of endearing compliments on both ſides, prevailed on her to compoſe herſelf; but for my own part, I never cloſed my eyes all night, but gazed at her with all the ſweeteſt ſatisfaction imaginable, by the favour of the moon, which ſhone very bright. At the approach of morning ſhe awaked, and declaring herſelf both eaſier, and better, believed, ſhe ſaid, that ſhe ſhould be able to walk to the booth; and ſeeming to have ſuch an

inclination

inclination for it, I would make no oppoſition to the experiment; but entreated her, not to ſtir a ſtep further than ſhe ſhould walk in perfect eaſe; for I told her, my greateſt fear was an inflammation, from whence, if a fever ſhould enſue, that might put her life in danger, and render me the moſt miſerable object upon earth.

She aſſuring me ſhe would be ruled by me, I took her up, and we walked gently towards the mountain; ſhe held out very well, ſo long as we kept upon the flat, but had not gone many pole upon the aſcent, before ſighing, ſhe told me, ſhe was afraid the hill would be too much for her. I then held her under my arm, and ſtopping ſhort, inſiſted upon her not ſtirring a ſtep further, and made her ſet down again; but ſhe growing very uneaſy at her ſituation, and fearing, as the ſun advanced, it would grow too hot for her; though I had the day before been but too ſenſible of my inability to carry her up the hill, yet my thoughts would not reſt till I had invented ſome eaſy means of conveying her; ſo begging her not to diſcompoſe herſelf by her anxiety, I aſſured her, I would convey her to the booth preſently, without the leaſt injury or fatigue; ſtepping

ping then to the ſkirt of the wood, I cut down firſt a large ſpreading branchy bough, and then as many ſmaller, long and ſlender ones, as would make a ſort of hurdle, by interweaving with the great bough; after that, I laid a great parcel of tender ſhoots upon it, collecting as I paſſed to the mountain, two or three arms full of long knot graſs, which I ſpread equally over all, and brought it before her.

She ſaw me coming at a diſtance, and could not imagine, (till my nearer approach,) what I was at; but when I reached her, and ſhe ſaw the contrivance, with the care I had taken for her ſafety and eaſe, her eyes pierced my very ſoul, nor had ſhe occaſion for the uſe of words to expreſs her ſatisfaction. I then raiſing her gently up, deſired her to place herſelf in ſuch a poſition on the graſs, as would be leaſt painful to her, in caſe ſhe ſhould meet with any jolt by the way; and told her, I now hoped to ſet her down ſafe at the booth, without any danger or fatigue to her. Here we began to compliment again, ſhe being ſorry to give me ſo much trouble, as ſhe feared I muſt have with her, before ſhe was well again, and being aſhamed that I ſhould be put to draw her

ſo

ſo long and toilſome a journey; but I told her, that the whole of my future comfort in life, depending upon her recovery, I ſhould never think any pains or ſkill of mine, even the conſuming my whole ſelf in her ſervice, could be too great a price to pay for it; and deſired her, never more to mention any thing I ſhould do for her, as a trouble.

Being ſettled on the top of my machine, in the moſt agreeable manner ſhe could frame; I took up the butt of the large bough, and proceeded with her; but tho' I was unwilling to diſcourage her with my doubts, I began to fear that my project would fail me; for what with its own weight, the addition of her's, the roughneſs of the bough, and unevenneſs of the way, I was at firſt hardly able to ſtir it, the hill being there very ſharp; but I ſtill puſhed on with all my ſtrength, and kept it going; till having drawn it ſome way, I found it come freer and freer after me, and at length it gliding on very ſmoothly, we arrived at the booth; but what was the joy and thanks of the poor creature, upon entering it? Had a king in like caſe, and danger, been entering his own palace, it could not have been greater.

O!

O! Mr. Daniel, ſays ſhe, I may now ſay you have ſaved my life, for I could have had no peace in my mind, till I had arrived here; and yet, of myſelf, I ſhould never have been able to have performed the journey; but you have ſet me down at the heighth of my wiſh, as if I had been tranſported hither in my ſleep, without the leaſt fatigue or trouble to me.

I helped her off from the machine, and deſired her to ſtand a moment at the entrance of the booth, till I brought in the graſs for a bed for her; which having done, and diſpoſed it level and ſmooth, I gently laid her thereon; and after giving her a draught of water, and a few nuts, I let her compoſe a little, and then entered upon my chirurgical operation: According to my beſt judgment, the wound looked very fair, and in a good way, which encouraged me to proceed in the manner I had done; and in ſhort, in a day or two more, it digeſted very kindly, and about three weeks afterwards, ſhe was able to walk to our own lodging and mount the tree; but I had kept her ſolely upon nuts and water, for I dreaded to let her ſee the ſalt beef.

She grew paſt my care ſince her walk; neither could all the art I had, ever after engage

engage her to let me apply another dreſſing; ſhe now was able to do it herſelf, ſhe ſaid, and the thoughts of ſubmitting to my operation, unleſs when induced by abſolute neceſſity, were ſo pungent to her, that ſhe could not bear them. In vain I urged the repeated dreſſings I had before laid on, and that it was but the ſame thing over again, and the neceſſity there was of obſerving the turns it might take; all went for nothing: ſhe told me, ſhe could not ſubmit, unleſs ſhe ſhould be compelled by a relapſe; ſo that being wholly caſt off from my office, ſhe became her own doctor, and in a week or two more, all healed up, and was well.

I now thought it high time to look after my own concern, and told her, that ſhe being ſo happily recovered, I could not think of deferring our nuptials any longer. Mr. Daniel, ſays ſhe, we are alone here, and likely to be ſo for ought I ſee, and but for each other's ſociety, ſhould be ſufficiently miſerable; though the good agreement that ſubſiſts between us, has advanced our condition to as much felicity as we are in this place capable of enjoying; but do you conſider what may be the conſequence of our union? We may have a family upon us, before we are provided

vided for them; and will it not be a ſad thing for our offspring, naked and defenceleſs, to ſhare the common fate of the beaſts of the iſland? We came hither cloathed its true, and therefore have not yet been ſenſible of the want of it; but thoſe cloaths are now almoſt paſt hanging on our backs, without the hope of ſupplying the abſence of them with others; again, if we had landed here without the two knives we have, (and which are now almoſt worn away too,) how could we have ſubſiſted theſe two years as we have done? And when they are gone, (which muſt ſoon be the caſe,) from whence ſhall we have a ſupply, or what can we ſubſtitute in their room, which can anſwer the purpoſes we have hitherto applied them to? For to my apprehenſion, a bull, or a ſwine, will after that become as uſeleſs to us, (as to the purpoſes of ſuſtaining nature,) as one of the many trees that now ſurround us is. Can our teeth make way through a boar's ſheild, or the hide of a bull? No, believe me, no more than thro' the bark of the tree; then let us reflect a little, on what we have wanted, and may want, which our children alſo muſt want, and whether we, or they, will have any means of obtaining it? Beſides, ſuppoſe,

as

(as it is no ways unlikely) that we ſhould dye in our childrens minority, if they ſhould ſurvive us, for want of proper principles infuſed into them by us, they would become wild, as the ſwine of the iſland, and in proceſs of time prey on each other, without the leaſt regard to ſocial virtue, or fear of an omnipotent being; ſo that we ſhould but beget a race of brutes upon earth, than to be which, ſurely not to be at all is preferable.

Having ended her diſcourſe; I, who could not ſee with her eyes, or be ſolely guided by her underſtanding, told her, that though the objections ſhe was pleaſed to make to our becoming man and wife, (from the probable conſequences,) ſeemed to bear but a melancholy aſpect; yet, that they were no other than our firſt parents might with equal probability have made againſt their cohabiting together; and I could not ſee, why we ſhould ſo far reject the hopes of the Almighty's regard for us and ours, as to imagine that He was leſs active, or capable to aſſiſt us and ours, than He was to aſſiſt them and their progeny, who ſet out under the very ſame diſcouragements and yet ſucceeded: wherefore, I told her, I thought it our duty to propogate our ſpecies, that we might raiſe people

people for our great Creator, to exerciſe his benevolence upon, and who might be capable of returning Him praiſe for it; and that for my own part, I ſhould not miſtruſt both ours and our childrens well being, ſo long as we acted in conformity to the divine will, and doubted not of His protection.

After ſome further reply from her, to the confirmation of her firſt ſentiments, I rejoined; that as it would be impoſſible to prevail with me, to diſtruſt providence, ſo I inſiſted upon purſuing the dictates of our natures, and to ſubmit all the reſt to that; which ſhe by degrees growing inclined to come into, we that day conſummated our nuptials; but that we might not ſeem to proceed precipitately, without ſuch previous ceremony as we were capable of, I ſhall give you an account of our marriage rights.

I took her by the hand and kiſſed her, then led her under the ſhade of the tree we had ſo long lodged in; I then aſked her woman's name, (for as yet I had never heard it,) and ſhe telling me, it was Ruth Comin; I replied, I John Daniel, do with the utmoſt good liking, take thee, Ruth Comin, to be my wedded wife, to live with thee, (whether on this iſland,

iſland, or elſewhere upon the face of the whole earth, that it ſhall pleaſe God to diſpoſe of us,) as thy huſband, all the days of my life; in token whereof, I bind thee with this ring, (tying a piece of cat gut about her finger,) and having ſaid this, I made her repeat the ſame words on her part, as to living with me as my wife; then lifting up our hands and hearts, and begging a bleſſing upon our union, I kiſſed her again, which concluded the ceremony.——————We then went and filled our water bottles, took ſome beef with us, and returned to the booth.

CHAP.

CHAP. VIII.

Ruth Comin gives an account of her family, and the cauſe of her appearing in man's apparel. Their reflections on her former love. Have a ſon. Have a calf. Daniel finds two corps on the ſhore, and ſtrips them. Ruth ſurpriſed. His reflection thereon. Goes again to the ſea. Finds ſeveral things. Loads his cow home. Forms ſchemes to diſpoſe of his cargo. Lays deſign of building, but relinquiſhes it. Want many things.

BEING now man and wife, as I have above related, I ſoon became very anxious after the knowledge of my wife's family, and how ſhe came to take upon her the occupation of a ſailor, and appear in the man's habit? She would, I believe, rather have been excuſed from the relation of it; but however, as ſhe was now my wife, (and that I might not ſuſpect worſe circumſtances than in reality the ſtory was attended with,) ſhe began, with

with giving me to underſtand, that ſhe was very well deſcended; that her father was Hugo Van Comin, a burgomaſter of Rotterdam; but that from her very tender age, ſhe was brought up under her uncle Herman Heyos, merchant of London, who had married her father's ſiſter, but had no children by her. Her uncle, ſhe ſaid, had a ſon by a former wife, who was much about her age, and being bred up play-fellows together, as they grew of riper years, they had contracted ſuch a friendſhip, and then a love for each other, as was not to be eaſily extinguiſhed.

Joſeph Heyos, for that was her lover's name, had not ſerved out his time with his father, to whom he was apprentice, when he aſſured her, that his paſſion for her, became too violent for his reaſon to ſubdue; and though they both had cooly reſolved, that their marriage, before he ſhould be releaſed from his ſervitude, would be premature; yet, he was ever ſoliciting her forthwith to conſent to it; not doubting but it might be concealed from his father, till a proper opportunity ſhould be preſented them to publiſh it; but ſhe ſaid, ſhe would not comply to any ſcheme ſo prejudicial as ſhe ſuſpected that might be to his intereſt.

She ſaid, that they being always in the ſame family together, numberleſs little opportunities offered, for his ſhewing her more peculiar regards than were expreſſive of bare friendſhip only; theſe, ſhe ſaid, could not be concealed from the penetrating eye of his father, who growing more and more jealous of his ſon's views, by the frequency of the inſtances which offered themſelves to him for that purpoſe; he took him to taſk, and taxing him with an amour with her; he, ſhe ſaid, was ſo far from denying the fact, that with the moſt earneſt entreaties, he begged his father to conſent, to what he had ſo long and ſteadily ſet his heart upon.

Her uncle, ſhe ſaid, was not to be wrought upon by any perſuaſions, or tears of his ſons; but in great wrath, not only forbad him all further thoughts of her, but as an abſolute bar to his future hopes, agreed with the captain of an Eaſt-Indiaman for his paſſage to China; and without the leaſt previous notice, ſent him on board; and that he might have no opportunity of cultivating a correſpondence with her, in leſs than a week he returned her back to her mother at Rotterdam, her father being then dead; but though her

uncle had acted with all this prudent caution, (as he thought) yet she had received a letter from young Heyos, by means of a friend, before he set sail, informing her of the part he was bound for.

Under the assurance of where he was, and was to be fixed, she said, she left England with far less reluctance than otherwise she should have done; and upon her arrival in Holland, her head ran only upon schemes, how to form an elopement from her mother, and to get a passage in some vessel bound to the East-Indies; for which purpose, (her mother being absent from home for some days,) she dressed herself in an old suit of cloaths of her brother's, and slipping out unperceived, in the evening took passage at the serving of the tide down the Meuse, where she entered herself on board the ship in which we were cast away, pleasing herself with the agreeable surprise it would be to Mr. Joseph, to find her so soon after him.

This, my dear, says she, is my history; nor should you have ever discovered my sex, had it been possible for me to have avoided it; but I'll promise you, I have never had the least thought of Mr. Joseph since I have been your wife; but have esteemed myself extremely blessed, in so endearing

endearing an huſband as yourſelf, without once repining at my lot.

I kiſſed her, and ſaid, I could ſcarce have expected ſo free a confeſſion of her amours; but was perfectly ſatisfied, that had I not at preſent ſtood firſt in her good graces, ſhe would not in ſo frank a manner have declared the very truth to me; but yet, ſays I, I can't ſee, as our marriage proved not a matter of choice, but neceſſity, how you could ſo ſoon transfer your affection from Mr. Joſeph to me.

Either, ſhe replied, I muſt have continued my love to Mr. Joſeph, and conſequently would never have linked myſelf to you; or if joined with you, muſt have relinquiſhed my hopes for him; this, I was ſenſible to be my caſe, and time ſufficient I had to weigh it in, between my hurt and the cure. I muſt own to you, at firſt my deſires for Mr. Joſeph preponderated very much; but conſidering how improbable a thing it was for them ever to be gratified; and ballancing in my mind the concern, the care, the anxiety, the regard you ſhewed for me, even before you could poſſibly ſuſpect me capable of becoming your wife; and which, I muſt ſay for you, my dear, from that moment expreſſed itſelf in the moſt pleaſing tender-

neſs for me; I from that inſtant you propoſed marriage to me, having ſo many and ſtrong motives to comply with you, never once, (as I had before determined in my own breaſt,) caſt back a reflection of concern for Mr. Joſeph, or have I now, any more, or other eſteem for him, than as an old friend and acquaintance to whom I wiſh a laſting proſperity.

Having heard, and duly conſidered all that my loving wife had to ſay, I was heartily glad I had put the queſtion to her; for her anſwer, and the reflections ſhe had made on it, had not only freed me from further inquietude, but very much endeared her to me ever after.

We lived in the ſweeteſt tranquillity for the remainder of the next year, dividing our time between the wood and the mountain; our calf being grown a large beaſt, and ſo tame, that we had for a long time left her unhaltered, and it followed us like a dog where-ever we went, and always of its own accord lay near us on nights, where-ever we lodged.

In due time, Ruth brought me a fine boy, which ſhe bore at the booth; but ſhe was ſcarce well up and out again, before we all on a ſudden loſt our heifer, which cauſed a common concern to us both. We

ſearched

ſearched every where, where we durſt be ſeen for fear of the beaſts, and uſed all poſſible means to recover her for ſeveral days, but all in vain; till (having given her over,) on the ſixth morning, as I ſtepped out of the booth, I had like to have trod upon her, ſhe lying quite croſs the door way. This unexpected and pleaſing ſight, drove me back again to inform Ruth of it, who was no leſs delighted at the news, than myſelf had been at the ſight; for ſhe leaving the child, and ſtepping with me, we all acted a moſt loving ſcene for near half an hour; the poor creature being as glad to ſee us, as we were to ſee her; and licking us with her tongue, while we ſtroked, and patted her with our hands; but ſeeing her back and ſides dirty, we preſently imagined what had been the occaſion of her elopement, and that ſhe had been to meet her ſweet-heart in one of the plains, which in due time ſhe proved to be true, by producing us another of her own ſpecies, which Ruth grew almoſt as fond of as of her own child.

We had now a ſtock of milk to add to our repaſt, and had ſeveral ſkins of both beef and pork hanging in the wood where our pit was, together with a large parcel of nuts, with which we had alſo filled

ſome other ſkins ; ſo that we could not be ſaid to want neceſſaries. My wife had now lain in of a daughter, during which time of her confinement, I took a walk to the ſea ſhore, on the eaſtern ſide of the mountain, being about four miles from us, having never ſurveyed the ſea ſhore that way before. In this journey I found ſeveral gourds or pumpkins, of a very brittle thin ſhell, and moſtly fleſhy within, of which I carried one home with me; I found alſo ſeveral other ſorts of fruits, and a kind of wild grape, which very well recompenſed me for my walk ; but what gave me a great uneaſineſs, and flattened the pleaſure of my diſcoveries was, that upon the ſhore I found, (juſt caſt up by the ſea,) two human bodies ; one whereof appeared to be that of an officer by his dreſs, and the other of a common ſailor.

That unuſual ſight ſtartled me indeed, and gave me a great horror ; however, my humanity inclined me to interr them, if I poſſibly could, and the ſand being very looſe, and light thereabouts, I was in hopes, (before the return of the tide,) to have raked a hole big enough for the purpoſe ; but ſoon perceiving myſelf unable to perform it, I ſtripped the two bodies, and

and marched back with my prize with all convenient ſpeed.

Ruth was very agreeably ſurpriſed with my cargo, but wondered where I could have got it, till I told her of the accident which had produced them. We agreed that they came in very good time, both for ourſelves and the children, for they were both naked, and we had purpoſed to keep them ſo; and ourſelves were now very little better, the ſhirts being entirely gone, and a third part of our jackets and waiſtcoats. Now, Ruth, ſays I, am not I in the right to rely on providence? Is not this as well as having a ſhop to go to, and buying theſe things? She agreed it was very providential indeed, but now ſeemed to wiſh for cloathing for her children, and ſaid, ſhe would ſome how patch our old cloaths up for the boy.

I laid the things down by her, as ſhe lay with the young infant in her arms; when a flap of them hitting her leg, here is ſomething, my dear, ſays ſhe, very hard in one of the pockets; then running her hand in, ſhe pulled out two handkerchiefs, a tobacco-box, and a long claſp knife of nine inches in the blade when ſhut, with a ſtrong ſaw of the ſame length, and a bodkin on one ſide, and a long

hook on the back; whilſt I was ſurveying this, and adapting it to ſeveral uſes in my own brain, ſhe pulled out a large leather letter caſe, ſtuffed very full, and tied with a piece of green ribbond. Ah, Ruth, ſaid I, I'll warrant you that contains all the poor gentleman's treaſure; now if we were where we could get the money for all the paper that it holds, we might be topping folks at laſt: by this time Ruth, (who had all the while been fumbling at the ſtring,) had untied it, and unloading its contents, they proved of infinitely more value to us, than all the gold or notes in the univerſe would have been; for it was crammed top full of threads, ſilks, tapes, ribbonds, pins, and needles; this my wife laid by as a ſpecial relick. There were ſeveral other things, that might have been valuable in another place, but were but of little ſervice here, ſave his watch, and a ſmall caſe of inſtruments in his breeches pocket.

Having had ſo good luck with the gentleman's habit, we came in the next place to examine the ſailor's; here we found another tobacco-box, a flint and ſteel, and ſome tinder in a little iron box; a new ſilk handkerchief, a knife and fork in a ſheath, a braſs pipe in a caſe, and ſome

ſome other trifles; but the ſhoes and ſtockings, with the reſt of the cloaths, and the trowſers, were a preſent, as we thought, for an emperor.

The next morning, I could not reſt till I had renewed my walk, which Ruth was heartily ſorry ſhe could not accompany me in; but however, the cow and the calf went with me. As I was ſatisfied there muſt have been ſome ſhip wrecked very lately by the freſhneſs of the bodies I had found, I was in great hopes of meeting with ſome further advantages by my journey, and eyed the water very narrowly, as I approached it, to ſee if I could diſcover any thing floating in it; but could ſee nothing, till I came over a little ledge, that had prevented my ſight of the ſands; and then, the firſt thing that I ſpied was, about three parts in length of a large maſt, with two ſails, and ſeveral ropes hanging to it; the water was then coming up, and the but end ſhaking with the ſurges, I was terribly afraid it would be a-float before I could ſecure it, and what I wondered at was, that as the water raiſed, and ſuddenly let it fall again, I ſaw a ſtick, which to my thinking, was fixed to the great end of the maſt. I immediately pulled out my knife,

and cut the yard from the maſt, and then the ſail from the yard; but the ſail was ſo heavy with the wet, and its own ſize, that I could not ſtir it from the place it lay in: I then drew all the ends of the ropes out in length towards the ſhore, and laid them as near together as I could; I then cut off the ſmall ſail, and drew that a good way towards the ſhore, and (waiting for the riſing of the tide,) ſo ſoon as I found any part of the things to float, I pulled the rope to which it was tied; and then another floating, I drew that rope; ſo that by degrees, the ſwelling of the tide aſſiſted me in getting them toward the ſhore; and having the ends of all my ropes above high-water mark, I drove in one of my ſpike poles, which I always carried in my hand, and faſtened them all to it. Having thus ſecured theſe things, I ſtripped, and wading up to my waiſt, was tying another rope to the ſtick I had ſeen at the but end of the maſt, when to my exceſſive joy, I found it to be a large axe, chopped into the end of it, but with ſuch force, that I could by no means wag or ſtir it. However, I deſerted my purpoſe of tying the rope to it, leſt it ſhould drop out with pulling, but faſtening it about the maſt itſelf, I drew the but end

as

as high upon the ſhore, as the little end was, and then confining it, I waited with impatience for the reflux of the tide.

As the water ſunk upon the ebb, I found my goods all left on dry land; and then, (my ſails ſeeming to me the moſt uſeful part of the purchaſe) I uſed all my ſtrength to wring them dry, and ſpreading them on the ſands, the ſun ſoon aided me, in perfecting what I had ſo eagerly begun: but when they were dry, I could by no means carry even half the main-ſail, and yet, I thought it great pity to cut it in pieces. After fretting about it a good while, a thought ſtarted into my head, that it might not be impoſſible to load the cow with it, and make her my bearer of it to the booth; ſo having myſelf drawn up the two yards, and a large piece which I had cut off the top of the maſt, and ſecured them from the return of the tide; I haltered the cow, and picking up a good armful of graſs, I led her down to the ſands, and laying the graſs properly for her to feed on, I begun my enterprize; firſt I folded the ſail up in folds about a yard broad, with one end next the water; then I placed my cow on the lower ſide and began to raiſe it up by the end to her back, whither with much ado I got it;

but before I could advance it any further it was down again; ſo that finding it would not be poſſible to proceed in the way I was in, as I was not fifty yards from high-water-mark, I made a ſlip collar round the cow's neck, and tying two traces from that to the ſail, the good-natured creature drew it up for me, with but little difficulty; and then, not having as much further to a ſharp ſand bank, I reſolved to get the ſail upon that, if I could, and had hopes from thence, (by bringing the cow cloſe to the bank) of packing the ſail upon her back, as I ſhould then be ſo much above her. Though this coſt me much time and pains, yet by little and little I effected it, and away we marched with the booty.

My wife, who did not expect me to ſtay ſo long, beginning to be uneaſy at my abſence, had got to the door of the booth to watch for me; but at firſt ſight of ſuch a figure as we made, (for the ſail lay as high as my head in doubles, above the cow's back) was ſtartled, not being able to gueſs, who, or what was coming, for ſhe knew nothing of the cow's going with me; but then ſeeing the calf play about, ſhe was ſure that muſt be her's, yet could not conclude, what it ſhould be of ſo vaſt

vaſt a bulk that was moving forward, (for the cow was quite drowned in her furniture,) till upon my ſpying her upon the watch, I called out, bidding her ſee what I had got here. Upon coming to the booth, and unloading the poor creature, we were both ſurpriſed at the immenſe ſize of the ſail, and wondered how it was poſſible either for me to load, or the poor cow to carry it.

We now fell upon ſchemes how we would diſpoſe of it, and thought of nothing leſs, than to cover ſome magnificent building with it; eſpecially, as I had informed her, of my fortunate finding the axe; but my head ran ſo ſtrongly upon my goods, that I had left behind, that I could reſolve on nothing, till I likewiſe had gotten them up to the booth; ſo the next day we went again, and the day following, and by degrees, brought up all the portable part of the cargo.

As we had obſerved the eaſt ſide of the mountain to be a very commodious place for habitation, both in regard to temperature and health, and alſo from its being entirely free from every noxious beaſt that might offend us, (we never having ſeen one of them on that ſide, or even near the top of it,) ſo we determined to fix our future

future reſidence there : I went to work, in hewing down timber proper for poſts and rafters, reſolving to bind them together with my cat guts; but after a week's labour and more, I perceived myſelf very deficient in my performance, for want of proper tools to go on with, and feared I ſhould make ſuch a bungling job of it, as we ſhould both be aſhamed of when done; this gave me ſo much concern, that my wife took notice that ſomething was the matter with me, and repeating her deſire to be informed of it ſeveral times, I at length told her, that if I had but ſome proper tools to build us a houſe with, I ſhould be ſatisfied; but to think that I ſhould erect a thing, that a puff of wind would overſet, had made me quite ſick of my project.

My dear, ſays my wife, I told you we ſhould ſoon be in want of many things, that we ſhould never be able to come at here, and that we ſhould entail the ſame wants upon our poſterity; and you will be daily more and more ſenſible of that truth; for you ſee, that even now, when you find yourſelf in poſſeſſion of many bleſſings, which were abſent when I told you ſo, yet, thoſe that we can never compaſs, are ſtill the moſt deſirable; there-

fore

fore ſince our complaints may be endleſs, if we cannot content ourſelves with what we have; my advice is, not to look beyond our reach, nor ever to bemoan to our children the privation of what they, or we can only attain in imagination.

I told her, that I could not ſay, but ſhe was in the right; yet, that if we had but ſuch and ſuch things, we might do numberleſs actions of ſuch advantage to us, as it was impoſſible for her to conceive; but however, ſince we could do no better, we muſt be content.

CHAP.

CHAP. IX.

Daniel and Ruth walk to the ſea. He finds a cheſt. Its contents. Gets it to ſhore. Brings home goods upon the cow. Makes a ſledge of the cheſt. Brings all home. Builds an houſe. In his ſixth year a violent hurricane. Hears guns. Goes to the ſea. Sees a ſhip wrecked. Reflections thereon. Ship's boat drives to ſhore with a bitch in her. Fears her, but ſpares her. Gets the boat.

MY Work had now ſtood ſtill for ſome time, and my timber and ſail had laid uſeleſs, not having the heart to go on with it; for as I had all my life time delighted in neat work, I could not bear to look at any that was not ſo in its kind. One day, after my wife was about again, ſhe told me, ſhe had a great mind to take a walk down to the ſea, where I had employed myſelf to ſuch good purpoſe, having never been with me there; but that ſhe was afraid to leave the children alone in the booth. My dear, ſays I, if you can

can carry the little one I'll take Jack, and as we don't want time, we need not fatigue ourſelves.

My motion pleaſed her very much, and we ſet forward, the cow and calf, as uſual, attending us. When we got to the water ſide, I ſhewed her where I firſt ſaw the bodies, then how I behaved to them; then I ſhewed her the place where I ſaw the maſt, and was telling her how I managed to get all the things up, and load the cow; when turning to the butt of the maſt, to ſhew her how that lay, what have we there, ſaid I? ſeeing ſomewhat like a large cheſt, ſtanding cloſe by the maſt; ſurely, ſays ſhe, it is another corps, that has been put into a coffin. I think it is, ſaid I, but I'll go and ſee; ſo giving Jacky to her, I bid her ſit down with the children, till I brought her word what it was.

I ſoon perceived it was not a coffin, for I ſaw a key-hole and hinges. It was full ſix feet long, and almoſt a foot and a half high, and about the ſame breadth, and a large handle at each end; upon my trying to lift it, I found it to be ſo weighty that I could by no means ſtir it; but that, I ſuppoſed, proceeded from the water, with which I did not doubt but it was full. I called to my wife, and told her, it was

no

no coffin, but a ſea cheſt, though the longeſt I had ever ſeen, and how to get it up I could not tell, it was ſo heavy; neither had I any thing to open it with. She aſked, if ſhe could be of any ſervice, but I told her no, and deſired her to ſtay with the children. I then fetched my ſpike pole, to which I had faſtened the maſt, and by degrees, edging it under the cheſt, I forced it over on its ſide, when the water ran out of it very plentifully; till at length ceaſing, when I thought it was all exhauſted, I turned it up again, and then trying to lift it by the handle, I found I could juſt raiſe one end of it; but much doubting, whether my wife and I could poſſibly carry it above the water-mark, I took out my long knife, that I found upon the dead corpſe, (for ever ſince I had had it, I had carried that in my pocket,) and cutting the blunt end of my ſpike pole flat, like a wedge, I ſtrove to force it into the front of the cheſt below the lid, and at laſt effecting it, I by main force got it open; it conſiſted of three diviſions, one of the leaſt whereof was full of new callicoe ſhirts, which had never been waſhed, ſome cotton ſtockings, a piece or two of chints, and a few pieces of china ware. In the largeſt diviſion, which

which took up full half the length, there were two coats, a hat, two ſwords, two piſtols, a powder horn of powder, a muſketoon, and about three dozen of balls, two good blankets and a ſmall rug, and all round the ſides were ſtuck carpenters tools; and the third diviſion was full of bottles with ſpirituous liquors.

I was all joy and gladneſs at this ſight; ſo running up to my wife with an armful of the bed blankets and cloaths, I told her what I had found, and that the tide coming in very faſt, if ſhe did not now come and aſſiſt me, we ſhould have half our cargo waſhed away, and perhaps the cheſt into the bargain. Though ſhe longed to be with me, ſhe ſaid, yet, her care was, what to do with her children; ſo I ſtripped off my new coat, (for I had got the dead man's cloaths on) and ſpreading it upon the ground, told her, ſhe muſt leave the children on it, till our return, for the eldeſt could not go alone yet.

She left the children with great reluctance, but neceſſity having no law, and ſuch an opportunity not to be neglected, to work we both went, and but juſt lightened the cheſt enough to make it portable, before the tide came up with us. We had four miles to go with the children,

and

and conſequently could carry little elſe with us; ſo we lodged the cheſt ſafe, and taking each of us a dram, we put the things in again, and returned.

The next morning, by day-break, I was at the water ſide, taking the cow with me; I carried ſeveral of the cords with me, which I had ſecured in my firſt adventure, and placing the rug ſeveral times double on the cow's back, to keep it from fretting, I laid two or three cords croſsways over her, and upon them ſpread out both the blankets, then ſcewering up the ends as high as the middle on both ſides, I left only a hollow on each ſide to put my goods in; in the bottom I put the callicoes and cloaths on each ſide equally, and on them the tools and arms, and at laſt bound up all ſafe with the cords, ſo that my blankets looked like panniers on the ſides of the cow, myſelf marching by her ſide with the muſketoon on my ſhoulder, then ſhutting up the bottles again, for another turn, I moved off with my load.

At my return, (for I was back before noon,) we went to ſorting the prize, and enough to do we had before night to perform it, for every new thing, (of which there were abundance) afforded matter for ſome enlargement upon its utility; neither could

could I, who had ſhifted with ſo little before, find one thing among ſo many, but what it would have been death to part with.

Having finiſhed our work, we went to bed, (as we called it) or more intelligibly ſpeaking, we laid us down upon the dried graſs; but I could take no manner of reſt for thinking how I ſhould get the cheſt up; for all the reſt (now I had them) would ſignify nothing without that: It was a place of ſafety, I thought, to put any thing in; and to have it rot there, or be waſhed away with the ſea again, was a killing thought. At firſt, I intended to draw it up upon ſuch a hurdle as I drew my wife upon, and was tolerable eaſy upon that head, till I conſidered how I ſhould get it above the riſing bank that bounded the ſands, the pathway down it being very narrow: At laſt, I concluded upon a way, that I was ſure would prove both ſafe and eaſy. I reſolved to take my axe, and cut two bending boughs, which I would nail on to the bottom of the cheſt, ſo that the elbows might be oppoſite to each other, and then I did not doubt, but either the cow, or myſelf, or both of us would eaſily draw it home; and big with this thought I went to ſleep.

The

The next day I prepared my elbow timber, took my hammer and ſome large nails, of which I had now plenty, and went to my cheſt; when having ſecured my bottom pieces, and ſtowed the bottles in again, I by the help of my cow drew all ſafe home, and in few days went to work again upon my building. I did not ſet my trap above once in a month or two now, having taken my cow one day, and brought home a lading of ſalt in my cheſt, which from that time ſerved me alſo for a cart; and it was not long before I ſplit my maſt in two, and hewed out two compaſs pieces of ſolid ſtuff for it's bottom, which laſted me many years.

I built me two good rooms of ſtakes and mud, covering all with my large ſail, and leaving only a ſmall door-way, near the top, into which we mounted, and deſcended by ſteps, and with our blankets and rug, had a moſt convenient lodging; wanting little or nothing, but what lay plain before us. I now began to think, I had a woman for my wife, ſhe having made her a gown out of the chints, and cloaths for the boy and girl. Thus we ſpent three years more, I having at the end of that time two more children, and

my cow having two other calves, and her firſt calf big with another.

We were in the ſixth year of our reign, when one night, as we were in bed in the houſe, there aroſe ſuch a hurricane, that we were forced to riſe, leſt the roof falling in ſhould have buried us under its ruins; but were in no better condition without doors than within; for ſtir which way we would we were almoſt taken off of our legs. Had not the ſky been ſo dark and heavy, we would have deſcended into the valley, as leſs expoſed to its violence; but it was ſo black, and rained ſo hard, that we were almoſt blinded with it, when we turned that way; ſo that we were forced to go over the top of the mountain to the weſt ſide to avoid it, and in our ſhort march, were often irreſiſtibly born along by its violence, the poor children crying all the way at our fright, tho' they knew not why; at laſt, deſcending about a fourth part of the way, we were ſomewhat ſcreened from its fury, by the ridge above us.

The morning's approach adminiſtred ſomewhat of comfort to us, but the wind rather increaſing than abating, left us deſtitute of further hope of ſafety by flight; and though we had imagined the valley

to

to be the beſt place for ſecurity, yet we now perceived our miſtake, for the eddies meeting there, tore up trees and buſhes, whirling them, and prodigious arms from the woods into the air like ſhuttlecocks, till they fell from different heights with vaſt precipitation. The cattle fled for ſhelter to the woods, till the violent craſhes of the breaking branches and trees terrified them to the plains again.

Whilſt we ſtood trembling here, we ſaw a violent flaſh at a diſtance like lightning, and by and by another, ſeemingly from over the mountain; at the ſight of the third, (the fury of the wind having juſt paſſed by us) we heard the report of a cannon, and ſome minutes after, of another. I could now contain myſelf no longer, but telling my wife, I would go to the mountain's ridge, and ſee what it meant, deſired her to ſit with her back to the wind, and lay all the children in her lap; ſhe entreated me not to venture, but I was ſo full of hopes, either of ſuccouring ſome in diſtreſs, or of relieving ourſelves by their means, from our confinement on the iſland, that I would not be put by my purpoſe. It was a very hazy morning, with miſly rain, which made it moſt uncomfortable walking to windward;

but I had no ſooner mounted the ridge, than I ſaw another flaſh, and heard another gun, which drawing my eye to the place from whence it came, I ſaw a large ſhip, labouring in extream danger, amidſt the waves of the moſt tumultuous ſea I had ever beheld; inſomuch, that I frequently loſt ſight of it for more than a minute, and then again could obſerve it, as riding almoſt in air, above the waves for the like ſpace; when ſeeming to fall headlong with immenſe celerity, I could conceive nothing leſs, than that it was plunged to the very bottom of the ſea. I could ſee the waters raging on the lee ſhore below me, and preſſing forward with ſuch impetuoſity and violence, as if they deſigned an aſſault upon my mountain; and though I was four miles from them, they were ſo elevated, as to ſeem juſt at me, and to be far above the level of the plain at my feet.

I called to my wife, repreſenting, as well as I could, in few words, the horror of the ſcene; and let her know, that I would run to the ſea ſide, and, if poſſible, contribute my endeavours to aſſiſt the diſtreſs'd ſouls on board, if providence ſhould caſt them on our ſhore, (as in all human probability they muſt be preſently;) the

wind ſetting juſt in upon it. I was perſuaded, it would be impoſſible for them to keep off, obſerving that they muſt have approached it ſince I firſt ſaw them, by ſo much as I could now more eaſily perceive the parts and proportion of the ſhip, than I before could; but as they were yet at a great diſtance, I endeavoured to make a fire on the mountain before I deſcended, as a ſignal to let them know that their diſtreſs was ſeen; but all my efforts were fruitleſs, for I had no ſooner collected an armful of combuſtibles to light, and had laid them on the ground, than they were whirled into the air, and diſſipated by the violence of the wind.

I then fired my muſketoon once or twice with powder, to let them ſee the flaſh, and charging it again, deſcended the mountain towards the ſea ſide; but was many times ſtopped by main violence, and driven back again, my breath being often almoſt gone by the force of the ſtorm in my teeth. However, I at laſt got upon the plain, juſt behind the ſhore, but was afraid to go near it, when I beheld the waves like mountains rolling to the ſtrand, as if they ſpurned the banks, and would have lorded it over the dry land. I ſtood contemplating on this diſmal proſpect, when (the

ſhip

ſhip being within leſs than a mile of ſhore) I fired my muſketoon, and was anſwered by a gun; but ſeeing her on the ridge of a monſtrous wave, and all on a ſudden diſappear, (for I ſaw no more of her) I preſume, that in her fall ſo near the ſhore, (not having depth enough of water under her) ſhe foundered, or bulged againſt the ground.

I ſtood viewing the ſea, and waiting for a ſight of the ſhip again, for ſome time; till the reflections on my own paſt miſerable ſhipwreck and miraculous eſcape, and the horrid fate of the poor crew juſt periſhed before my face, brought a flood of tears to my eyes. Good God! ſays I, what am I, that thy mercy ſhould have been extended to ſo undeſerving an object? (For I am ſenſible of no good thing in myſelf,) and yet, that ſo many poor ſouls as that veſſel muſt have contained, (and wherein there muſt undoubtedly have been ſome more worthy creature than I am,) ſhould all now periſh, and that only myſelf and wife, ſhould have avoided a like diſmal calamity. This conduct of thine, tho' it may ſeem ſtrange to me, is ſtill, I doubt not, regulated by an unerring rule of wiſdom: but how, if I was ſpared only for my undeſervings, and to protract

in me a life, reſerved for ſtill harder fate to be inflicted upon? No, it ill becomes me, to have any ſuſpicions of the unkindneſs of providence, after ſo many mercies already received.

It is true, ſays I, I was caſt on this coaſt, with only one companion; but might not I have been here in more diſmal ſolitude alone? A companion in diſtreſs is a great comfort; but has not that very companion, beyond my warmeſt wiſh or expectation, turned out to be a loving wife, and help meet to me? And then, that we might not live in dread of abſolute privation, and intercourſe with our own ſpecies, upon the death of either of us; hath not the ſame providence ſupplied us already with four fine children, whoſe growth will daily render them more ſerviceable and acceptable to us? Now, all this could not have happened, had not my companion providentially been a female; ſince therefore, without my forecaſt, every alteration of my circumſtances hath proved a further bleſſing to me; and as I am not deſtitute of hope, that even the fatal accident before me, may prove of utility to me; I muſt be a very ungrateful brute, not to rely on the proviſions of the all

wiſe

wiſe Director of all things, for my future ſupport and comfort.

Having ended my ſoliloquy, and riſing from my ſeat to return to the mountain, I caſt a farewell look to the ſea; when I thought I beheld ſomewhat floating, that looked black; but it was ſo far off, that it appeared very ſmall to me, and ſometimes loſing ſight of it for a conſiderable time, and then again obtaining a peep at it thro' the billows, I determined to wait a little, and obſerve, whether it approached or not; and if not, I concluded that it muſt be ſomewhat faſtned to the ſhip, but if I could obſerve it to move forward, I then would wait for its approach.

It was now high noon, and the wind had greatly ceaſed, but ſtill the contention of the waters ſeemed to be but little abated; when I plainly ſaw, that what I had ſo long watched at a diſtance, bore the reſemblance of a boat. O, thinks I, if any of the crew are but ſo happy to eſcape in her, we may poſſibly lengthen her out, and get with her to ſome new ſettlement where there are inhabitants; for they will be able to inform me, in what part of the earth I am, and what courſe to take, to get into the living world again. I pleaſed myſelf with theſe reflections, till upon the

arrival of the boat near me, (for it was a boat) I perceived myſelf ſtrangely deluded; for there was no creature in her, but a large maſtiff bitch, big with puppy.

I was now afraid that the ſurges would have daſhed the boat to pieces upon the ſhore; but yet, the fall of them was too violent for me to attempt uſing any means to preſerve it. I whiſtled the poor bitch, (for ſhe ſtood on the prow, with ſo turgid a belly and large dugs, that I did not doubt but ſhe was near whelping) though I can't ſay, but I was ſomewhat fearful of her too; then ſhe barking very fiercely made me the more ſo, and had almoſt brought me to a reſolution of ſhooting her with my muſketoon; but firſt whiſtling, and calling to her, ſhe whined, and wagged her tail ſo lovingly to me, that I could not have the heart to proceed; at length, clapping my hand to my ſide, and chirruping to her, ſhe plunged into the waves, and forced her way to ſhore.

I was now in twenty minds how to receive her, for ſhe run at me, (to my thinking) furiouſly; upon which, I put myſelf upon my guard, with the muſketoon to my ſhoulder; which ſhe ſeeing, and taking it for a ſtick lifted up againſt her, fell upon her belly, laying her head flat

flat upon the ground, and wagging her tail, ſeemed methought to beg my pardon for her rudeneſs; when perceiving her under ſo good command, and calling her, though ſomewhat ſharply, ſhe crept up to me, crouching on her belly, till I by patting and ſtroking her, gave her encouragement to riſe; but then the poor creature expreſſed her gratitude in ſo many windings, leaps, and fawnings upon me, that I even became enamoured of her, for her gentleneſs and good nature.

I had watched every opportunity of aſſiſting the boat all that I could in coming to ſhore without damage; and the fury of the ſea abating, upon the departure of the tide, one large billow threw her entirely dry on the ſoft ſand, when the next falling ſhort of carrying her off again, and the ſucceeding ſurges ſtill abating their ſtrength, by the retreating of the tide, I ſaw myſelf in abſolute poſſeſſion of the boat, till the return of the next flow; but no method occurring to me of removing her above high water mark by my own ſtrength or ſlight, I ſet out immediately for the houſe, to bring down my cow to aſſiſt me.

My wife and children, upon the abatement of the wind, had betaken themſelves

to the houſe again, and were very much ſurpriſed at my entering it to them with my new companion at my heels; but I informing her by what means I came by it, and that it was the gentleſt creature I had ever met with, their ſurpriſe ceaſed, and they made very much of her. I told my wife of the boat, and that I came for the cow to draw it on ſhore, and recommending the bitch, (which I then tied up and left behind me) to her care, I proceeded with the cow to the ſhore again, where having raiſed the boat's keel with my lever from the bed its fall had made in the ſand, with the aſſiſtance of my cow, I drew it up to the ſhore, and leaving it there returned.

CHAP.

CHAP. X.

Increaſe of his family. Sees part of the ſhip above water. Finds a turtle, but knows not what it is. Sails in the boat. Takes the turtle on board. Boards the ſhip. Brings home a cargo. Account of what he got from the ſhip. Builds an houſe by the ſhore. Family increaſes. Finds ſeeds on board, and ſows them. Gets fowls. Breeds tame pigs.

THE Affairs of my family, having kept me near home for ſome days, I went again to the ſea, to obſerve if any thing had been caſt on ſhore from the wreck; but I was forced to go by myſelf, my wife having full employment at home, as you may eaſily conjecture, when I tell you, that ſhe was near her time, had four children to look after unable to help themſelves; my bitch was in the ſtraw with a litter of ſix whelps, and my young cow had calved; ſo that the family being pret-

ty large, the miſtreſs could not well be ſpared from it.

As I deſcended towards the ſhore, having the ſea beſt part of the way in my view, I thought I ſaw ſome ſigns of the veſſel above water; and upon a nearer proſpect, (the tide being lower than I had ever ſeen it) I was ſure it muſt be that; I was no ſooner ſatisfied of it, than my mind ran ſtrangely on going to it; but then the impoſſibility of conveying my boat to the water, entirely daſhed my hopes, and rendered it abſolutely impracticable. I ſtormed and fretted to myſelf, that I happened to come ſo late, when perhaps I might never again meet with the like opportunity of the lowneſs of the water; and then, though my boat was launched, it would be of no ſignification. I had once a mind to have ſtayed all night, and have watched the tide's coming up, and to have prepared the boat for putting to ſea at its return; but conſidered, that my keeping out all night, would put my family in the utmoſt conſternation and confuſion; at length, reſolving to ſtay till high water, I amuſed myſelf with walking upon the ſand, till I had rambled to the ſouthward, almoſt three miles.

Whilſt

Whilſt I was thinking of my return, and turning my face to the ſea, to obſerve how faſt the tide roſe, I perceived ſomething about a hundred yards below me, like a ſtump of a tree, on the ſands; I wondered how that ſhould come ſo much below high water mark, imagining that it had formerly grown there, and had a fancy to view it; but when I came within twenty paces of it, I could ſee it move, which very much ſtartled me; and walking round it at a ſmall diſtance, the ſand flew about my ears ready to blind me, till getting before it, (for it moved ſlowly towards the water) I plainly ſaw a head move, and was then certain it muſt be ſome ſea animal. I had my ſpike pole in my hand, and my ſword in my girdle, (that being what I never went without ſince I firſt had it) and finding that whatever it was it was not ſwift of foot, I darted my ſpike pole at it; but it bounded back again, as if it had met with an anvil, and ſtill the creature moving but ſlowly, (but yet, as I had reaſon to judge, at its top ſpeed) I boldly marched up to it, and with one ſtroke of my ſword almoſt chopped its head off, ſo that it fell to the ground: Upon this, though the creature made ſome ſtruggling with its feet, ob-

ſerving that it made no way, I poked it with my pole; but having withdrawn both its head and feet from my ſight, I could not now tell what to make of it, and the tide coming in, I was very ſorry I could no further dive into the myſtery of it; I was then forced to leave it, for having ſtayed ſo long, I was obliged to run back again to my landing place, which was the only commodious one, I had ſeen in my walk, there being a broad cut as it were, ſloping through the ſea bank, which was elſewhere very ſteep.

I had made an obſervation by my watch, how long the tide had been coming up, and found it to be upwards of five hours; and judging that the return might be above ſix; I ſuppoſed, that it would be high water next day about ten o'clock in the morning; and accordingly, having with my lever, and a roller or two, fixed my boat for launching down the cut; I returned home, reſolved, if poſſible, to viſit the ſhip next day; and having no oars, I cut two very long poles, to puſh me along with, purpoſing not to venture further than they would guide me.

Having launched my boat the next morning, and the tide being now upon the ebb, as I had time enough before it

would be ſo low water that I could come at the ſhip; I puſhed up to the place where I had ſeen the creature I had found the day before, and the tide had juſt left it as I came. I then ſhoved my boat ſome yards further into the ſea, and moored it to one of my poles, and taking the other in my hand, I waded up to the creature; having no long time to ſpend with it. Finding I could make no entrance into it with my knife, I went to lift it up, but it was almoſt too many for me; at laſt, with the help of my ſtick, I turned it over on the convex ſide, and then feeling about with my knife, I found I could make an entrance at the edges all round. I was very unwilling to leave it behind me, thinking that the hollow caſe being ſo hard, might be uſeful to me, if I could but get the body of the creature out of it; ſo I rolled it along upon the edge to my boat, and by main force, at length boarded it; but had much ado to wag my boat, till I had edged it more to the ſtern, and then the boat riſing before, I ſhoved off, and made to the ſhip.

I found it lying a little inclining to one ſide, and that all the maſts were overboard. Now the upper port holes of the higher ſide, appearing fully above water, and

and the tide ſtill ebbing; the firſt thing I did was to fix my boat, and to ſtep over the ſhip's ſide upon deck; then looking down the hatch, I found great part of it clear of water, it having only ſettled on the lower ſide; there were ſeveral hammocks and bedding, which I cut down, and threw upon deck, and alſo every thing that I could well manage, and carry off at once. I took particular obſervation how low the water ſunk at loweſt ebb, and finding it to ſink as low within the ſhip as without, and to keep on a level with it, I was ſure there muſt be a leek at the bottom, not perceiving it to run out on the ſides. I hove all that I thought proper into the boat, and when the tide began to flow, I ſtept into the boat myſelf, and fathomed what depth the ſhip lay ſtill in water, which I found to be not above five feet. I then went on board again, and unpinned ſeveral of the upper port holes, and ſearching, found her to be a homeward bound ſhip by the cargo, conſiſting of bales of callicoes, for the moſt part that I could yet ſee.

As the water drove me from the hold, I got into the cabbin and ſteerage, from whence I took a compaſs and ſeveral ſea inſtruments, and there I found three dead bodies,

bodies, which after ſearching, and finding ſeveral valuable things upon them, I threw over board; then having rumaged for what elſe I could meet with, I loaded my boat chuck full, and made to ſhore; but had not the tide ſet in, and aſſiſted me, I might have been loſt, for my poles were now uſeleſs to me, the water being ſo prodigiouſly riſen. When I came into ſhoal water, I worked for my life to reach my harbour, before the tide turned, that I might be able to moor my boat in the cut, at the very height of the water, or ſhe would have been left on the ſands, to the mercy of the night flood, which might have hazarded not only my cargo, but the boat itſelf.

I acquainted my wife with what I had done, and the next day harneſſing my cow, I marched with my cheſt to unload my boat; and at two turns, brought all up to my habitation. Upon producing my creature that I had killed two days before, Ruth ſaid, it was a turtle, ſhe having ſeen many of them at her uncle's, and that they were accounted delicious eating; ſo we immediately, by her directions, opened it, and dreſſed a part for our ſuppers, for I had brought up two large ſaucepans, and a frying-pan with me.

Finding

Finding ſo much difference between meer nature only, and the addition of art too, I could not reſt till I had procured all that was attainable from the ſhip; ſo that my whole time was taken up in plundering and bringing it home; but when I came to remove the bale goods, they were too weighty to yield to my force, in the condition they were in, which obliged me to cut, the firſt that I attempted, open, and bring it up by arms full; but they were ſo wet and ſobby, that it required rather the labour of a horſe than a man to go through with it; this giving me ſome diſtate, the next time I came down, I brought my ſaw with me, and beginning at one of the portholes, I cut out a vaſt ſquare piece from the ſhip's ſide, even with the under deck, and by that means made room for a bale to ſlide out, which, by frequent priſes with my lever, I eaſily effected; and faſtening the planks I had cut out, ſloping to my boat, I ſlided the bales down them into it. I found a vaſt quantity of very good candles and wine, and every ſort of houſehold utenſils; ſo that in ſhort, I was as well ſupplied with every kind of neceſſary, as I could have been, had I gone with money in my pocket to the beſt market town in England; but I brought

brought up only ſuch things as were ſmall, light, and moſt uſeful, piling all the reſt upon the ſhore, till I had more leiſure; for ſince my cutting the hole in the ſhip's ſide, the water came with ſuch force againſt it, on the leaſt motion of wind, that I was very much afraid of her beating to pieces, and diſappointing my further views; for which reaſon, I for ſome time lay on the ſhore, to take advantage of the night ebb, as well as of that in the day.

In ſhort, having landed almoſt every thing that was portable, I took all the guns (of which there were fourteen) from their carriages, and landed the carriages alſo. I forced out every bolt, cramp, and the leaſt piece of iron work that I could find any where; and at laſt, removed all the brick work furnaces, and coppers, with the iron work; and then I ſet upon breaking up the cabbin, the wainſcots and decks, till I had wrought her down to the low water edge, or even beyond it; leaving neither ſtick or nail behind me, that I could carry off: And thus, for near eight months labour, I had procured cloathing enough for an army, and materials for a little town.

When

When I had thus done, and began to remove them, the work before me appeared to be endleſs, (with my conveniencies) and I told my wife ſo; giving it at the ſame time as my opinion, that it would be leſs trouble, by far, for us to remove our habitation to our treaſure, than to be at the fatigue of removing that to us; and that having now boards and timber ſufficient for a good building, we would ſettle ſomewhere near the ſhore; where, in caſe of another hurricane, we ſhould be more under ſhelter, and in leſs danger than on a bleak mountain. This ſhe readily coming into, we prepared for the change.

I began, with only making a little hovel at firſt juſt to ſleep in; but daily wanting ſomething from our old habitation, I made a cart, which I ſet upon the wheels of the cannon carriages, and joining my young cow to her mother, had a little team, with which I brought away ſuch things as I wanted from my houſe: But not to tire my reader with each day's tranſaction, and every little turn of my affairs, I ſhall at once acquaint him, that having at a little diſtance northward of my landing place found a ſmall ſtream, which run into the ſea, we pitched by it; and that at the

the end of my ninth year, I found myſelf in poſſeſſion of eight cows and calves, and one bull, beſides a bull calf or two, that we had killed in the family. I had eleven dogs and bitches, beſides their mother, who was now grown old and uſeleſs; and I had ſix children, three boys and three girls; I had a houſe well boarded in, (with a good brick chimney in it) conſiſting of four good rooms; I had a large ſhed for my goods and cart, and a ſhelter for my cattle; and that he may not be ſurpriſed at my large kennel of dogs, it will be ſufficient to inform him, that I had trained them up to hunting the boar, and frequently wild heifers and young bulls; and though I often loſt a dog, yet they bred faſt enough to allow for deſtroying abundance, and for keeping up my ſtock of a dozen for my uſual hunt.

I cannot ſay that any thing remarkable happened to me till my twentieth year, ſave that I had incloſed and improved about three acres of ground near my new houſe, and had always abundance of peas, oats, and barley, which I raiſed from the ſeed I had found on board; and which produced much larger crops than I had ever ſeen in England; eſpecially the firſt year of ſowing, which I attributed to its being well

ſoaked

ſoaked in ſea water. I had raiſed a forge, and ſpent great part of my time in knick-nacks, and uſeful things in the iron way, as a jack and ſpits, a plough and harrow; and I had tranſplanted almoſt every ſort of herb and plant that I had found wild in the iſland into my garden, where thoſe that anſwered were preſerved, and the reſt I threw out. I had alſo bred up a ſort of pheaſants, (which I caught young) ſo tame, that they laid, and brought up their young about my houſe; but all I could do, would not reclaim the wild pigs, of which I had made frequent experiments; till at laſt, having left my garden door open one night, and catching an old ſow in it in the morning, (for it was ſo ſtrongly fenced, that ſhe could not get out, being very big with pig, and not able to leap) I laid plenty of food for her, and in three days time ſhe farrowed a litter of pigs behind ſome lumber, I had piled up at one corner; I watched the ſow's coming out, and ſetting the door open, with the dogs I hunted her out of the garden, towards the mountain, where they killed her; I then made an encloſure round the pigs, ſo that they could not get out of it, and being but newly farrowed and weak, I caught them, and kept them upon milk

in

in the houſe, till they were as tame as puppies; and by that means procured a great breed of them. I alſo made gins for a creature we had no name for, but called it the cuckoe, from its noiſe; it being made like a badger, but rather larger, and was more delicious than, and as white as any veal. Theſe were my uſual works till my twentieth year.

CHAP.

CHAP. XI.

Diſcourſe between Daniel and Ruth on marrying their eldeſt ſon and daughter. Marries two more ſons to two daughters. Jacob, his fourth ſon, ingenious at ſmiths work. Their diſcourſe. Jacob falls on a ſecret ſcheme. Marries all his children but Jacob. Deſcription of a ſtrange amphibious animal. Goes in ſearch of a ſettlement for his younger children. Deſcription of three ſeveral places for ſettlements. Harry pitches on the laſt. Billy on the middlemoſt. Return home.

MY eldeſt ſon John, being about ſeventeen years old, and my daughter Ruth ſixteen, I found by their mother, that having heard of the numbers of people there were in the world, they grew uneaſy at living in ſuch a deſolate ſtate, and wanted to be in ſome of the great cities, they had heard us talk of, amongſt a num-

ber of people, where they might live, as we had reported to them, that other people did: Whereupon, I told my wife, that as there was no law to controul neceſſity, I thought it were beſt to marry them together, that in caſe of our deaths, they might have the earlier ſupply of hands, who, by turning their thoughts to their own preſervation, might not only be helpful to themſelves, but to each other, and ſupply the want of new comers.

My wife ſeemed to have a great averſion from ſo inceſtuous a union, (as ſhe called it,) till I aſked her, to whom ſhe thought Adam had married his ſons? Why truly, ſhe ſaid, ſhe believed it muſt have been to his daughters, as there could be no other wives for them. I told her, that in the ſituation we were, we muſt ſuppoſe ourſelves Adam and Eve, and act as they did, upon the ſame emergencies; ſo that at length, ſhe was perſuaded of the neceſſity of it, and propoſing it to them, who as yet were furniſhed with no arguments againſt it, they joined in with the propoſal, and I gave them the old houſe, with a cow and calf, a ſow, and two pigs, with ſeeds to begin a plantation, their two brothers and I helping them to incloſe a

ſpot

ſpot of ground, and to ſettle every thing commodiouſly about them.

About three years after that, I married my ſecond ſon, James, to my ſecond daughter Elizabeth, and ſet them out in the ſame manner; and three years after, I diſpoſed of the two youngeſt of the ſix in the ſame manner; and by the time we had been there thirty years, I had fifteen grand children, and five other children by my wife, three whereof were boys, and two girls; the eldeſt of the laſt three ſons, (for I called them my ſecond brood of children, my wife making a ſtop of four years, between the ſixth and ſeventh child,) having been inſtructed by me in the ſmiths way, was ſo ingenious at any device I ſet him upon, that from the leaſt hint, he would perfect every ſcheme he proſecuted; but upon mentioning his marriage with his eldeſt ſiſter of the ſecond brood, he told me, he had other things in his head, and that, if he married her, one of his youngeſt brothers muſt be unprovided for, and that he choſe rather to prefer them than himſelf; eſpecially as he was ſenſible, from the care and pains he had perceived his eldeſt brother take, that if he was married, it would rob him of more time than he choſe to part with from his buſi-

neſs;

neſs; and he ſaid, that now there were likely to be ſo many families of us, we ſhould find work enough for him, in the iron neceſſaries we ſhould want.

I cannot ſay but this diſcourſe of Jacob's, (for that was his name) pleaſed me very well; for thinks I, this will be a means of providing for my two youngeſt ſons, and ſettling them, and one of his nieces will ſoon be fit for Jacob, if he wants a wife hereafter.

Jacob, whoſe head was ever after ſomething new, was perpetually enquiring into the country I came from, and was as well verſed from my report, as myſelf, in the arts, manners and cuſtoms of it, and was daily longing to be there; and as he was a mighty favourite of mine, was for ever preſſing me to go thither in my boat, for he was ſure he could row long enough to get to it. I uſed to laugh at his diſcourſe, and pleaſed myſelf at his ignorance at firſt; but when, after a while, he became importunate, I ſhewed him his folly, in pretending to paſs over an immenſe ſpace of water, beyond conception, in ſuch a little tottering thing as my boat, which the leaſt daſh of a middling wave, would turn upſide down; and then, I told him, our voyage would be ſpoiled indeed; for

if the great ſhip that I came in, could not reſiſt them, what could the boat do?

He begged me to tell him, what ſort of a thing in every particular a ſhip was, which I did as well as ever I could deſcribe it; and ſays I, it is blown along by the wind, againſt ſeveral ſails, deſcribing them, and how they were hung, and the ſize of them; the maſts they hung upon; the vaſt ropes, and the ſize of the iron anchors: Iron anchors, ſays Jacob, iron anchors? Yes, ſays I, ſeveral of them. I am afraid, ſays he, we ſhall never be able to make a ſhip; but I wiſh I had one of the iron anchors. He then aſked me, how far the ſhip I ſpoke of could go in a day? I told him, with a good wind, the breadth of our iſland in an hour; and how long was you coming hither, ſays he? It may be two hundred days, ſays I. He ſtarted at that, then ſighing, well, ſays he, I muſt be content, I ſhall never get thither: That you will not, ſays I, unleſs you could fly, as that great bird does, pointing to a large water fowl that was before us.

We then parted, but yet not a day paſſed ſcarce, but we had more of this diſcourſe. He kept mighty aſſiduouſly at his work, and ſome time after, I obſerved that

that he was making ſeveral things in iron work, very fine, yet ſtrong, but of ſuch ſhapes as I was unacquainted with the uſe of. I aſked him often, what they were for? But he always put me off with, you ſhall ſee one day.

Some time after, he begged me to give him a piece of the callicoe, that I had by me, (for I had abundance) which I did, and it was not long, before I ſaw ſomewhat on the mountain, waving about in a very unuſual manner, nor could I for my life gueſs what it ſhould be; but it ſeemed, by the dazling againſt the ſun, to be quite white; my curioſity then led me to take a nearer view of it, but I could make nothing out, till I had got a good part of the way up, when, what ſhould it be but my ſon Jacob, with a large piece of this callicoe, tied lengthways between the ſpire ends of two taper poles; theſe I found he was raiſing and falling, to weigh with himſelf what reſiſtance the air made to them.

I ſoon entered into an enquiry, what was the deſign of his proceeding; but he ſmiling, told me, it was only an experiment, which he was reducing to practice, and that when it was perfected, I ſhould know its uſe; and this I was forced to put

up with, as the beſt light I could get into the affair.

A while after, he wanted ſome of the cabbin wainſcot that I had laid by; ſo I gave him leave to take what boards he would out of my ſtore; and having lent him, at his requeſt, ſome ſuch carpenters tools as he wanted, he fell upon another branch of buſineſs, for a great while together; where I ſhall leave him, and return to the reſt of my family, now daily encreaſing.

I had married my two youngeſt ſons to their youngeſt ſiſters, and was about ſetling them near us, as we were now expert enough at working up mud walls, upon raddled ſtakes, which we covered with boughs and graſs, to a ridge, and that we recruited on the top, as it ſunk, ſtill keeping it ſharp as we could to ſhoot off the ſhowers, which at ſome ſeaſons fell very heavy. I had diſtributed my dogs about amongſt the ſeparate families, till I had but three left for myſelf, and I took now great diverſion in ſhooting, eſpecially amongſt the doves in the great wood, of which we had ſuch plenty, that we might almoſt have lived upon them.

Having a fancy one day to ſhoot ſome water fowl, I took my gun and my dogs, and

and one of my grand children with me to walk along by the ſhore of the ſouthern part of the iſland, to which, and to the north-weſt part, I had never yet been very far; we had rambled about ſeven miles, as near as I can gueſs, when my dogs ſpying a boar, that lay wallowing in a ſwamp near the ſea bank, they ſprung forward with great violence: The beaſt being ſurpriſed, fled, and at a good diſtance from us, puſhed over the bank into the ſands, the water being then pretty low; we ran as faſt as we could, and came up time enough for a diſtant view of a violent fray between them; but obſerving, as I thought, five creatures inſtead of the four that fled from us, all in a ſkirmiſh together, (for they were too quick in ſhifting places, for us to obſerve them nicely) I clapped a bullet into my gun, then looking again, I ſaw the boar at ſome diſtance, running as hard off as it could, and yet the ſcuffle continued, with equal fury as before; I then began to think it was ſome other boar they were baiting, but coming ſtill nearer, and within a more diſtinct view of them, the moſt horrid creature preſented itſelf that I ever beheld: It was about the ſize of a ſmall horſe, with two ſtrait horns, each a full ell long, ſtand-

ing directly upright; it had a very ſhort back, and vaſt broad hinder feet, with ſhort thick legs, and round buttocks; but its fore part was very tall, and ſtood very upright, on ſuch broad feet as were behind, with long ſtrait legs; its eyes were very ſmall, and the head ſhort, thick, and blunt, with a wide mouth and lips, almoſt like a horſe's, a flat noſe, but very broad, a ſhort, thick neck, and hairy, as was the top and back part of the head; it would make a growling noiſe like a lion, when firſt he begins to grumble, and was very active with its fore legs, ſtamping, and playing its horns forwards horizontally to keep off the dogs; and though its hinder legs moved but heavily, and it turned about but ſlowly, yet when the dogs came near its buttocks, (for they were fearful of attacking it before,) it would, by throwing its head back, give them ſuch ſevere blows with its horns, that I once thought it had broke the back of my beſt dog; ſo for fear of miſchief to them, I was forced to call them off.

I made the child, who was ſorely ſurpriſed at it, keep ſome paces behind me, and then I walked towards it; but took care to keep out of the reach of its horns. It crept along, between ſitting and ſtanding,

ing, its hind legs being ſo very ſhort; and when I lifted up my gun at it, it would ſtand ſtill, lick its lips, and growl, moving its mouth, as if it wanted to ſpeak, and to my thinking, uttered ſome articulate ſounds. When I ſtood directly before it, it would ſtop and not proceed further; and if I held out my gun, it would retreat backwards; when I went behind it, it flapped back its head and horns, beyond the length of its body; but I obſerved, that when I went to its ſide, its head never moved at all; ſo that even with my gun I could not puſh his horns ſide ways, which I perceiving, went ſo near as to ſtroak it, without any danger; its ſkin was as ſoft as velvet, with very ſhort downy hair all over.

I ſtood viewing it ſo long, that the tide had almoſt come up to us, and the ſands began to grow ſoft, and then I had thoughts of ſhooting it; but what hurt, ſays I, has this poor creature done? It is an ancienter inhabitant of the iſland, perhaps, than I am, and its life as precious to it, as mine to me. If I deſtroy it, there is an end of it. No, it is in its proper buſineſs and way of life, and as it cannot be an annoyance to me, neither will I be an offence to it; ſo I went to its ſide,

and ſtroaked it again; good-by, ſaid I, I could, but I will not hurt thee; and then withdrawing up higher on the ſands, turned to ſee how it would behave in the water, which was then very near reaching it.

It no ſooner touched the water, than it began to daſh with its fore feet, and getting up above its middle, it almoſt flew, bouncing up, and then darting under water for a long way, then up it came, and at laſt ſinking, I quite loſt ſight of it, though I looked very wiſhfully after it, at leaſt half an hour; then thinking it time to be moving homewards, the child and I turned a little to the right hand, thro' ſome buſhes, where in a large ſwamp, over-run with ruſhes and flags, we ſaw two more of the ſame creatures, feeding amongſt the flags; but having ſatisfied my curioſity as to their frame and make, we ſtruck off another way and left them.

Having married my two youngeſt ſons and daughters, as I ſaid before, and all the elder families encreaſing, I adviſed them to ſeek a ſettlement on the northweſt ſhore, to which I had never yet been; for I had ſeveral views in diſperſing them; as firſt, by inhabiting the ſeveral ſhores, we ſhould be able to keep the better look out, for any ſhip that might be paſſing; and

then

then growing ſo numerous, we could ſcarce procure nuts in the adjacent woods, ſufficient to ſupply us all, (for we had for many years made a ſort of bread of them.) So that by ſcattering our families, we ſhould be more eaſily furniſhed with them; and again, we were always in readineſs, if any wreck ſhould happen, to make the moſt advantage of it.

I offered myſelf and ſome of my grandchildren to take the weſtern tour with them, and inform ourſelves of its propriety for ſuch ſettlement; for as to the inland parts, we had no notion of fixing ourſelves there, becauſe of the annoyance we muſt be ſubject to, from the wild beaſts which were ſo numerous in them. We ſet out, traverſing the ſhore within view of the ſea all the way, and coming a little beyond the end of the mountain, we ſaw a fine plain, of a mile or more over each way; Harry, my fifth ſon ſeeming mightily pleaſed with it, told me, he thought that would make him a delightful ſpot for his habitation. Come, come, ſays I, don't fix your choice Harry, till you have ſeen all the reſt of the land; however, you may keep the idea of this in your mind till we come back, and then by comparing one place with another, as you are to

make your election before Billy, (that being the name of my youngeſt ſon,) you may then pitch on which ſpot you pleaſe; but there is ſomething further to be done, before this place may be found proper for either of you, and that is, to ſee what conveniencies you can have for water and nuts; therefore we will croſs the plain to the woods, in ſearch of thoſe two benefits, before we can paſs any judgment upon the place.

We did ſo, and found plenty of nuts, and alſo a fruit like a very large muſcle plumb, which I remembered to have grown in our orchard at Royſton, but quite green throughout; it had a very ſmall ſtone or kernel, the coat not being thicker or harder than a parchment, and deliciouſly flavoured when quite ripe, as we found ſome of them to be; beſides this, there were in the ſkirts of the woods, and opener parts of it, a ſmall ſhrub, exceeding full of round red berries, or pods, in each of which were, it may be, fifty ſmall white ſeeds, as big as grape ſhot, which were encloſed in a fuzzy pulp, of a very diſagreeable taſte; but the ſeeds were full of a ſweetiſh milky ſubſtance, of a pleaſing reliſh enough, and we picked ſeveral of them, chewing them as we went along;

and

and at the weſtward end of the plain, ran a pretty ſmall brook of water. All this promiſing very well, we noted it in our minds, till we ſhould have finiſhed our perambulation.

This work having concluded our day, we lay in a thicket near the plain, and ſet forward again by the ſhore next morning; when the tide being down, ſome of us walked along the ſhore, and others on the main land. Having gone ſtill ſome miles more weſtward, we ſaw at a diſtance, the whole ſhore ſeemingly in motion; Billy ſpied it firſt; father, ſays he, what is the matter yonder, there is a vaſt flight of ſmall birds, I think, running all over the ſhore, ſo that it looks to be all in motion with them? I turned my eyes to them, but could not diſtinguiſh what they were. At laſt, I judged they muſt be water rats, of which there were ſhoals in ſome parts, and my dogs had killed thouſands of them; ſo I told him, I believed they muſt be rats, though I never ſaw any thing like the ſame number together before.

By this time, we were almoſt come up to them, when we perceived they were not rats, but muſt be the young ſpawn of the creature I had before killed, which my wife aſſured me was a turtle, and was

ſo good to eat; we thereupon caught ſome of them, and I put them up in a piece of callicoe, I uſed for a handkerchief, till we ſhould dine; when I purpoſed to make a meal of them; but ſurely there could not be leſs than a hundred thouſand of them, all of the ſame ſize.

A little further, it may be ſeven miles from the firſt plain we had ſeen, and about three hundred paces from the ſea, was another plain, not near ſo large as the firſt, with the fineſt riſing hill in the middle of it that I had ever beheld; for it ſloped every way from a point at the top, to a brook which ran from the ſouth eaſtward woods, branching both ways into leſſer ſtreams, almoſt round it, except for a part of the way next land; ſo that it made a circular iſland, of about half a mile in diameter. No, father, ſays Harry, this ſhall be mine, for I am ſure I ſhall meet with nothing more beautiful than this is. I told him, I would give no opinion till I had ſearched it, and the woods about it, for if they did not anſwer, the beauty would ſoon become diſagreeable. We paſſed one of the arms of the river, which did not riſe above our knees, and found the woods exceedingly well furniſhed with many uſeful things, and ſo having finiſh-

ed

ed that day's ſurvey, we kindled a fire by the river ſide and dreſſed our turtle. I can't ſay, whether ſome other cooks might not have ſurpaſſed us in ſauce, and perhaps might have had more than fiſh; but we only cut them out of the upper ſhell, and taking away the lower, ſet them on their backs upon gentle embers, turning them in the upper ſhell till they were enough, and by the help of keen appetites, made a moſt noble meal of them.

The next day we travelled till we came due weſt, and almoſt to the place where I was firſt caſt on ſhore. The coaſt was here very high and woody, behind which, more inland, was the prettieſt proſpect I had ever ſeen, being, as it were, one continued viſto from the wood, over ſeveral plains, quite croſs that angle of the iſland, for about eight miles; at the end of which, you might ſee the ſouthern ſea. The deſcent to the firſt valley lay in a regular hollow ſlope, riſing to each ſide, where it was bounded with wood, and upon the top of the higheſt ground, juſt fronting the viſto, was a lawn of about two hundred paces diameter, quite ſquare, with a ſpring of the ſofteſt water I had ever taſted, iſſuing from that ſide next the ſea, and which, by length of time, had cut itſelf

ſelf a drill in the ground, where, in its deſcent from the ſeveral little precipitate falls it had, it made a perpetual murmur; and quite at the bottom, had ſwelled itſelf into a regular baſon; ſo that looking either ſouthward, or northweſtward, you had at the one a moſt charming diſtant, and at the other a regular near proſpect; and the woods, upon ſearching them, preſented vaſt plenty of nuts and many vines, whereon hung natural dried grapes, as fine as I ever taſted any raiſins in my life, with divers other fruits.

The ſhore was pretty rocky, upon which, at low water, was plenty of ſalt, and ſuch abundance of crabs and lobſters, as would have been ſufficient proviſion for all the ſouls upon the iſland. Here we lay the third night, and then aſking Harry, now he had ſurveyed the lands of our whole intended journey, which ſpot he ſhould chooſe to inhabit, he was ſo confounded with the thoughts of each, that he knew not how to pitch on either; till at length, he told me, he would remain where he was; for the benefit of the ſalt and fiſh being ſo near him, he thought could not be counterballanced by any of the advantages of the other places; to which Billy replied, he was heartily glad

of it; for, ſays he, if my brother had made choice of that delightful place we came laſt from, I ſhould never have been at peace, for the envy I ſhould have born him; but ſince he has left me my round hill, let him take all the reſt to himſelf, if he pleaſes.

I told them, it gave me a ſingular pleaſure, to perceive them both ſo well ſuited, and that we would the next day traverſe the ground back again for my houſe, where I would endeavour to accommodate them both with ſuch things as I judged moſt uſeful for them to begin with, and would get ſome of their brothers to aſſiſt each of them in framing their ſettlements.

We ſet forwards next day in our return, when we ſaw a very large fiſh, about a yard and half long, run, as it were, out of the water, up the ſand, and preſently a much larger ſhewed its head and ſhoulders, as in purſuit of the leſſer; but the water ebbing very faſt, it could not reach it; and indeed, had like to have ſtuck on the ſands itſelf, but ſtruggled back again with great difficulty. I bid one of my ſons run and fetch up the fiſh, but he called out for help, when he came to it, being unable of himſelf to manage it; when they had brought it up, we meaſured it,

(for

(for I never went without a rule in my pocket) at a yard and half and two inches long, and thick in proportion: It was a ſmooth coated fiſh, had very large fins and ſmall mouth, almoſt round, and was of ſo luxurious a taſte, that we carried beſt part of it home, and divided it amongſt the whole colony, for it weighed a full half hundred weight.

CHAP.

CHAP. XII.

Prepare victuals and materials to begin new ſettlements. Order of their march. Settles Billy, and leaves him a ſtock. Settles Harry, and leaves him a ſtock. Daniel's method to keep unity in his family. Name of his iſland. Has been there forty years. Jacob borrows the cart. Stays three days in the mountain. Daniel thinks Jacob had made a ſhip there. Sees it move. Jacob ſhews his father what he has been doing. Had been making a machine to fly in. A leaf to prevent hunger.

WE ſpent about a month at home, in preparations for our new ſettlements, and in laying in proviſions, both of bulls, and ſwines fleſh; for upon a general hunt, we always gave notice of meeting at a particular rendezvous, at ſuch a day; and then, each coming with all his dogs, we went inland, each armed with a ſpike pole, whoſe ſpikes were now of iron,

iron, and each a brace of piſtols in his girdle, and perhaps a muſket or two, (for we had got fire arms enough from the ſhip, and had ſaved a vaſt quantity of powder, by drying it in the ſcorching ſun, till it was almoſt as good as ever,) then ſingling out a bull, or other beaſt, we firſt fired at him with ball, and then, hit or miſs him, we ſeldom failed taking him; for our dogs were ſo uſed to it, that the moment we mounted a gun, they could tell whither it was pointed, (as we always, if poſſible, ſhot at a ſingle beaſt,) and then they no ſooner ſaw the flaſh, than they bore away to it, all following the ſame creature, and never leaving the chace till either they had brought it down, or were too much ſpent to purſue it; but as we ſeldom failed of drawing ſome blood, if near enough, our dogs no ſooner perceived it, than we were ſure of the beaſt, for in that caſe he never eſcaped: then we cut him into portable pieces, and having well rewarded the dogs, carried home what each ſaw fit at once, or we were ſure of its being all devoured before morning. So having killed one bull, and two hogs, we ſet out for the ſettlements.

We marched in all, four of us men, ſix boys, my two youngeſt daughters, and two

two female grand children, with my cart laden with a goodiſh ſort of a brick that I had made, and other materials, drawn by three cows. We pitched at my youngeſt ſon's ſettlement firſt, that being neareſt, and looſing the cattle to feed, went to the woods, where we cut down as much timber as would build two rooms and a ſhed, chooſing none, but ſuch as was ſo far by nature prepared for our purpoſes, as not to require too much labour to fit it; then we drew down the largeſt on the cart, and every one, according to his abiſity, carried other leſſer parts, even the children, bearing the raddling and mud twigs, and lighter ſtuff. When it was all ready laid upon the ſpot, two men ſawed it in lengths, and ſplit ſome of the thickeſt pieces, whilſt two others dug earth for the walls, and tempered it; the children chopping off the ſpray twigs, and the women bearing them and knot graſs to the tempered earth, to be mixed and chopped into one maſs with it. When this was ready, the men worked at the building, whilſt the women and children gathered bundles of graſs for the covering; ſo that with the labour of many hands, in about a month's time, we had fitted out Billy with an habitation, and in another month, we had hedged

hedged him in a little garden, and about two acres of land compleat.

When we had finiſhed here, we all marched to Harry's quarters, and having in much about the ſame time ſettled him, upon the charmingeſt ſpot in the whole iſland; we left him and his wife, with one cow, and a dog and bitch, with part of the proviſions we had caught, during our labours; and in our return, left Billy and his wife equally provided, and then we went home, having promiſed each of them ſome ſwine and poultry, with ſeeds, both for the garden and field.

The report we made at our return, of the happy ſituation of my younger children, rouſed up Jack, (who had long been diſpleaſed with my old habitation,) to ſeiſe upon the firſt ſpot we had ſeen in our progreſs. He firſt went to view it, and admiring the ſituation, as indeed it muſt appear moſt elegant to him, who had not yet ſeen the other two; he upon his return, applied to me and his brothers, and with his own ſons, who were two or three of them tall lads, we began to tranſplant him thither, and fixt him and his family to their content.

I had but one inconvenience in my mind, that might attend this diſperſion of my

my children, which was, leſt they and their families ſhould become ſtrangers to each other, and (for want of that cordiality, which frequent intercourſe generally keeps up amongſt neighbours,) ſhould in time, live in a ſtate of war, and enmity with each other, as diſtinct, and diſunited colonies; for which reaſon, I promoted to the beſt of my power, conſtant viſiting, ſtaying at each other's houſes for ſome days, and propoſed diverſions and exerciſes in the midway, for all to meet at; and by that means, keeping up a good underſtanding between them, they continued to live in perfect love and harmony together, ſo long as I tarried amongſt them, which was long enough to ſee the ſouthern ſhore well peopled; and at my departure, and for ſome time before, we were ſo numerous, that neither my wife or I, knew how many there were of us.

Jacob had for ſome years buried himſelf in a little hovel, he had built for his own uſe in my yard, and was always accounted of my family; and though my other children were diſpoſed of, I had commonly one or more grand-children at home with me and my wife. I was now in the fortieth year of my reign in this iſland, (which I had named, *The Iſland of Providence*;

dence; and the point where I had fixed my reſidence, I named *Point Fortune*, from my receiving ſo much benefit from the ſhipwreck on that ſpot;) when Jacob came, and deſired me to give him ſome of my wax, (for I had a vaſt quantity by me, from the bees that I had deſtroyed, for the ſake of their honey) I did ſo, about three pounds, or more, wondering what uſe he had in his head to put it to; and I was ſatisfied it was to no purpoſe to aſk him; but about a week afterwards, ſeeing him come from the mountain with his long poles in his hands; ſo, Jacob, ſays I, have you been weighing the air again? Father, ſays he, it will do, it will do, and away he ran into his work room.

Some time after, he deſired me to lend him my cart and a cow, to draw ſomewhat up to the mountain. I told him, with all my heart, and as I had but little to do, I would go with him; but I ſoon found, I had touched upon a wrong ſtring, he begging I would excuſe his refuſing my company at that time, for he had an experiment to make, which if it ſhould not ſucceed, he ſhould be as much aſhamed of, as he ſhould have reaſon to rejoice, if it proſpered. Well, Jacob, ſays I, of all my children, I ſee you muſt be the philoſopher,

ſopher, and left him, with leave to take the cart, and what elſe he ſaw fit. He did ſo, and ſtayed out upon the mountain for three days and nights. I often took a walk, and looked towards it; and as conſtantly ſaw ſome freſh appearance, by which I knew he was alive, or elſe by his long delay, I ſhould have ſuſpected ſome accident had befallen him; but on the third day, as I ſtood below him, I imagined I ſaw ſomewhat like a large ſail of a ſhip, flapping about in the air, and began to ſuſpect, that after all the diſcourſe we had had about ſhipping, he had been putting ſomewhat like it together, on the mountain. I was laughing to myſelf, at the impropriety of the place, he had choſe to build his ſhip on; poor lad, thinks I, how will he be puzzled, when he wants to launch it into the ſea? I was pleaſing myſelf, I ſay, with theſe ſpeculations, when I ſuſpected that I ſaw it move, and wondering how it was poſſible for him to bear along a machine of the bulk that ſeemed to be; for I viſibly ſaw it paſs along, faſter and faſter, till ſome trees deprived me of the further view of it: I ran therefore to avoid the obſtruction of the trees, to a ſpot, not above ſixty paces off, from whence I could command the whole top

of

of the mountain; when turning about, I perceived the ſhip, (as I termed it to myſelf,) ſtanding almoſt at the further extremity of it, and in about half an hour more, (for I ſtayed, determined to obſerve the iſſue of it) I perceived it to move back again with great velocity, to its former ſtation. This motion quite confounded all my former ideas of a ſhip, for, ſays I, though it was poſſible to make ſomething with ſails, that would be drove along before the wind by its force, yet how this thing could ſo apparently move with equal celerity againſt the wind too, I cannot imagine.

It being fixed on the firſt ſtation, in leſs than an hour, I ſaw Jacob, the cow, and cart, all deſcending the hill; and being impatient to know what it was he had been doing, I ſtepped on as faſt as I could to meet him. Son, ſays I, pray what conjurations have you been carrying on upon the mountain, for I have ſeen to my thinking, a ſhip there? Pray how have you diſpoſed of it, for I can't ſee it there now? O, father, ſays Jacob, I will now ſhew you your own country again; I am ſure I can go thither with all the ſafety imaginable, and much ſpeedier than your ſhip could go. But, Jacob, ſays I, though

from the deſcription of my ſhip, you may imagine, that you having made one ſo much lighter, it can go ſwifter; yet you don't conſider, that you have built it in the worſt place you could have contrived for launching it. Launching it, ſays he, what do you call launching? That is, ſays I, letting it down gently into the ſea at high water; how do you propoſe to bring it down from the mountain to the ſea? Why, ſays Jacob, I have brought it down here in the cart. At that I laughed very loud. O Jacob, ſays I, when I was a boy, I have made a ſhip of a bean ſhell, and put up a little maſt in it, and if your's was to be ſet a-float in the ſea, I ſuppoſe it would meet with the ſame fate as my bean ſhell uſed in a puddle; to be ſoon turned keel upwards.

Father, ſays Jacob, I don't underſtand one word you ſay, nor can I think what you conceive of me. Why, ſays I, I ſaw plain enough, what you have been at theſe three or four days: You have (from the notion I gave you of a ſhip) been making ſome little thing, as like one as you can, and are now ſimple enough to imagine, that you can go to ſea in it; and as for going, I will not be poſitive but you

may; but I am as certain that you will never return again, if you do.

Indeed, father, you was never more deceived in your life, ſays Jacob, than at preſent. I have made no ſhip, nor any thing like one, nor intend I to go to ſea at all, for your cataſtrophe has driven all ſuch thoughts from my mind; no, ſir, you ſhall ſee, I will travel on a better footing than a ſhip: He then told me, he had brought his machine to abſolute perfection, and that he had been making an experiment for flying in it. Flying in it? ſays I, what? And was the motion I ſaw upon the mountain flying? It was indeed, father, ſaid he, and a delightful motion it is too. Had not you wheels to your machine, ſays I, or did it not ſlide ſome how on the ground as it went? No, no, ſays Jacob, I am ſenſible that no ſliding on the ground can be called flying. Why, father, I actually flew in the air, without any other ſupport than that ſea mew hath, (pointing at one,) and if you will return with me, you ſhall fly yourſelf. I told him, that we would not return now, for he muſt be fatigued, and hungry, I ſuppoſed, having been four days abſent, and that it was time to go home and refreſh himſelf; but I would go with him ſome other day. Perhaps then, father,

father, you don't think a man can live without eating and drinking, ſays he. No, truly, ſays I, and he that does, muſt have but a ſhort, and ſorry life of it. Jacob ſmiled; pray, ſays he, have not you and my mother many times wondered, how I could ſubſiſt on ſo little food as you have obſerved me to eat? We have indeed, ſays I, but yet a man muſt eat ſome; nature can't perform its proper functions without it. Then, father, ſays Jacob, do you think I have been all this while in the mountain without it? No, indeed, do I not, ſays I, you muſt have been ſtarved. But I can aſſure you I have, ſays he, and could have ſtayed ten times longer there, without the leaſt inclination to any.

Pray father, added he, have not you obſerved ſome time ago that I declined coming to meals, at the ſame time with you and my mother? I believe I have, ſays I, but have ſeen you cut meat at other times and carry into your work room. That, ſays he, was only to deceive you, for the dog always eat it. No, I have lived ſix weeks together without the leaſt nouriſhment, ſave what I have extracted by chewing theſe leaves in my mouth, (pulling at the ſame time a handful from his pocket;) well, ſays I, and don't you

call that eating? No, ſays he, I never ſwallow it, but let it only lie in my mouth. But you have had water, ſays I; not a drop, I'll promiſe you, ſays he; and if you would make the trial, you would find it anſwer, as I ſay.

Theſe facts, ſo ſtrongly atteſted by Jacob, a ſober, careful, diligent young fellow, could leave me very little room to doubt of their certainty; I really ſtood in admiration at his inquiſitive temper, which ſeemed to promiſe ſuch wonders; then aſſuring him, that I would one day go ſee him make uſe of his machine on the mountain, we parted for that time, he having before promiſed me, at my leiſure, to explain the whole contrivance to me.

CHAP.

CHAP. XIII.

Daniel can't comprehend Jacob's machine. Daniel and Ruth ſet out to viſit their ſeveral children planted round the iſland. Settle among them regulations for their conduct. Reſolve to deſtroy all the wild kine and ſwine. Their method. Daniel goes with Jacob to ſee him fly his machine, which he called his eagle. Deſcription of its parts. Daniel's thoughts of it. Jacob flies in it; and entreats his father, who conſents.

THE machine Jacob had made, and the uſe he had in my ſight put it to, ran prodigiouſly in my head; for as he had unfolded its purpoſe and deſign to me, I could not reſt, till I had ſketched in my brain the method of its operation; or at leaſt a probable means of performing the effect, though ſomewhat differently; but though I was always eſteemed to have none of the leaſt mechanical heads, I could by no means form any deſign, that my

own reaſon could frame no material objection to.

About this time, my wife, who had long been talking of it, had come to a reſolution of making a progreſs, to viſit all her children and grand-children, at their ſeveral ſettlements, round the iſland, and take her leave of them all; for ſhe ſaid, that growing now in years, it would probably be the laſt perambulation ſhe ſhould be able to make; as the journey would be very conſiderable, of at leaſt ſixty miles. I told her, that ſhe and two of her grand-children, we had then with us, ſhould ride on the cart, and that I would walk by them; this we having agreed upon, we left Jacob to take care of all at home, and ſet forward. We made our ſtay longer, or ſhorter at each houſe, as it happened; and having this opportunity of viſiting them all in a ſhort ſpace, I conſulted with them ſeparately upon ſeveral regulations to be made amongſt us, for the well being of the iſland in general, and of each particular family; and from one to the other, I carried our reſolutions quite round; ſome of them propoſing, as they thought propereſt, alterations to be made to the general ſcheme, but all ſubject to my judgment; for they all ſtill

paid

paid me the deference, of ſubmitting the final reſerve to me.

I had been in my youth very ſtudious in the bible, the want of which I greatly regretted, though I gave them all ſuch traditional knowledge, both of the creation and their redemption as I was beſt able; and I looked upon myſelf and wife, as Abraham and Sarah, or the old patriarchs, amongſt the ſeveral plantations of our offspring; neither is it to be imagined, what joy reſulted from our finding each ſeveral family encreaſing, both in poſterity, cattle, and conveniencies of life, all the way we travelled.

Amongſt other propoſed regulations, we came to a reſolution, before all our gunpowder was gone, to root out, if poſſible, the whole breed both of the kine and ſwine; all the wild ones, I mean, that the inland parts of the country might become habitable, and be paſſed by us at any time, without danger of our lives, as heretofore; and for that purpoſe, I propoſed a general meeting, when every one was to bring their dogs, and dividing into ſeveral bodies, each taking their circuit, perform the execution.

Our method, as I ſaid before, was firſt to ſhoot the beaſt we would deſtroy, and

then purſue it with the dogs; and now that we might make the ſpeedier diſpatch, we faſtened ſharp irons, like a ſickle almoſt, to the end of a long pole, and while the beaſt was at bay with the dogs, we ſtruck with it at his hock, and cut the back ſinews of the hinder legs, which having done, we called off the dogs again; ſo that inſtead of one in a day, which one ſett of us uſed to kill, we could each ſett diſable, it may be eight or ten of them, and in about a month's time, we had ſo thinned them, that it was difficult to find a ſhot in a day's walk.

The boars were more difficult and dangerous to be deſtroyed; for they taking ſhelter, (for the moſt part in the day time,) amongſt the buſhes and brakes, it was a hard matter to diſlodge them, and hazardous meeting them amongſt the turnings, where we could no ways perceive them, till they were upon us; ſo that we dug pits in ſeveral places, baiting them as I did at firſt, and by that means brought them very much under, and whenever we met with a litter, our dogs would for the moſt part deſtroy them.

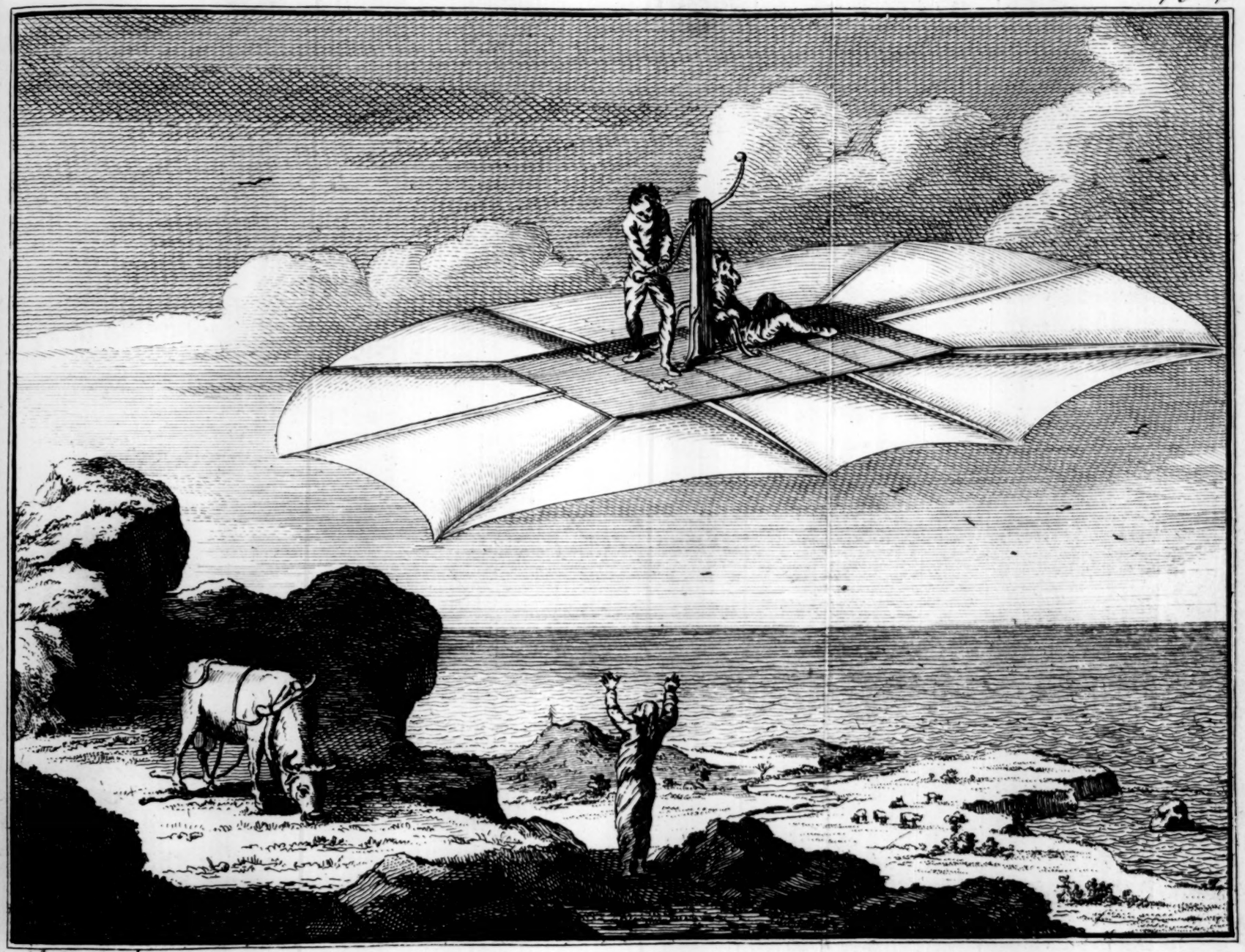
The preſervation of the wild kine and ſwine was now the leſs neceſſary, from the abundance of the tame we had of each kind

kind at our ſettlements, which every year were augmenting; and thus having in about ſix months, taken the circuit of the whole iſland, and ſettled its general oeconomy, we returned to my old habitation.

After ſome ſmall ſtay at home, I attacked Jacob again upon his machine, when he took me into his work room, and ſhewed me the ſeveral pieces of which it conſiſted, moſt of which were made of iron; and though exceeding ſtrong and tough, they were ſo thin, light, and taper, that I could not have imagined ſo great a force of iron could have been wrought into ſo little a weight; there were ſeveral pieces of wood work too, and one ſomewhat like a pump, but all ſo nicely wrought, as only to preſerve ſtrength, without ſuperfluous weight; but then, the whole being in ſuch a number of ſeparate pieces, it was no eaſy matter to conceive, what ſort of a figure it would compoſe, when each was adapted to the other; nor could I from the beſt idea of its ſingle parts, dive into ſeveral of its conſequences; but this I only could obſerve in the general, that I never ſaw pieces of work better executed in my life, than the ſeveral parts ſeparately examined, ſeemed to me to be.

It was not long after this, that Jacob deſired me to go with him to the mountain, to ſee him flie his eagle, as he called it; and I, with great expectations embraced his propoſal; telling my wife, what I was going about, and planting her properly to be a ſpectator of it.

We loaded the cart, and conducted it up the hill; when diſcharging it of its burden, we turned the cow to graze, and began our operation. He firſt of all ſtruck four poles into the earth at proper diſtances, meaſuring them with four bars, in the ends of the two longeſt of which, on the flat ſides, were four holes, into which the four points of the upright poles were to enter, at about three feet high from the ground; then letting the ends of the ſhorter pieces, (of which there were ſeveral) all tennanted at the ends, into mortices or grooves on the inward edges of the two long pieces; he pinned them in very tight, leaving about a foot ſpace unfilled up near one end, where he had contrived a trap door to lift up and ſhut down at pleaſure; ſo that when the whole wood-work was framed, it looked like a ſtage or floor, upon which he could mount, by getting under it, and opening the flap door.



Boitard Fecit

In the middle of this floor was a hole about four inches diameter, to let in a pipe like a pump, to the upper part of which was an handle on each ſide, and a pendant iron between them, which ran through the pipe beneath the floor; and the pipe itſelf was held firm in the floor, by four long irons faſtened to its body, and ſcrewed down to the floor in a ſquare figure: This was the whole form of the upper ſurface of the floor.

Near the extremities of this floor every way, at proper diſtances, on the under edge, were driven in ſeveral flat and broad headed ſtaples, into each of which were thruſt and ſcrewed in a thin iron rib, about three inches broad next the floor, and from thence tapering to a point, at the length of about three yards, ſo wrought and tempered, as to be exceeding tough and elaſtick, with each a female ſcrew at about three foot diſtance from the edge of the floor; theſe were all cloathed with callicoe dipt in wax, each running into a ſort of ſcabbard or ſheath, made proper in the cloth to receive it, and being all ſcrewed to their ſtaples and the floor, made an horizontal ſuperficies of callicoe, (including the floor) of about eight yards diameter, but was ſomewhat longer than broad.

On the under ſide of the floor was a circle of round iron, above five feet diameter, with ſeveral upright legs, about a foot long, equal in number to the above deſcribed ribs, and ſtanding in the middle ſpace between them; each of which legs entring upwards through a recipient hole in the floor, was ſcrewed tight by a nut on the upper ſide of the floor. Between theſe legs, on the interſpaces of the round iron ring, juſt under each rib, hung ballances, exactly poiſed upon the ring, with all their ends nearly meeting in the center, under the pipe hole, each of which, by an iron chain fixed to it, was linked to the ſucker iron of the pipe or pump, and the other end was, with a like chain, linked to an iron loop, ſcrewed into the female ſcrew of the rib, juſt placed over it; and then all the cloathing was hooked upon little pegs all round the outward edge of the floor, ſo cloſe as to keep the air from paſſing in any quantity.

Thus the whole apparatus being fixed, my ſon opened his trap door, and aſcending through it, mounted his floor, fixed the handle, and began to play his wings, to ſee that all was right; (but very gently, for fear of riſing off his poles, till he was quite prepared). I then obſerved, that when

when the pump handle was preſſed downwards, as in pumping, that raiſing the ſucker, the pendant iron raiſed the end of the ballances next to it, when the other extremities of the ballances, hooked to the ſeveral ribs, neceſſarily deſcending, drew their correſponding ribs downwards; and that the uplifting of the handle conſequently gave the ribs liberty, (through their ſpringineſs) to return to their horizontal poſition again; ſo that they were raiſed and depreſt, proportionably to the motion, and force of the handle, and exactly anſwered the uſe, and play of wings in birds.

Having found that every part anſwered to his wiſh, and having faſtened his trap door down, the whole machine ſtanding at ſuch a height that I could both look under, and over it, it appeared to be of a vaſt dimenſion.

It was of almoſt an oval form, and each wing extended at leaſt three yards at the ſides from the floor, but at the two ends it was ſomewhat more; and there being a handle on each ſide the pipe or pump, he could make it go which way he would, by altering his own ſtanding, as he told me, either on the one ſide or the other of the pump; for the ſide he ſtood on being

the heavieſt, and the other conſequently mounting rather the higheſt; it would always move that way, which end was the higheſt.

I told him, I looked upon it as an ingenious ſort of a whim to try an experiment with, and that as I had ſeen it play, I was now ſatisfied it would fly, but adviſed him to come down for fear of any accident; for now I had gratified my curioſity, I deſired to ſee no more of it. What? ſays he, be at all this trouble in breeding up my eagle, and not take one flight in it? He wiſhed, he ſaid, that he knew which way England lay, for that then he would certainly go to my father's at Royſton. Poor lad, ſays I, you think that there is nothing but England out of this iſland; whereas England is no bigger, with reſpect to the whole habitable earth, than my hand is compared to this iſland. No, there are numberleſs places nearer to us than England. What? houſes, ſays he, and cattle and men there? Ay, ſays I, and Engliſhmen too, ſuch as I am.

Jacob growing impatient of delay; come, father, now I am mounted on my eagle, ſays he, you ſhall ſee me fly. I would fain have diſſuaded him; but he began with his pump handle, and riſing gently

from the poſts, away he went, almoſt two miles; then working his contrary handle, as he told me, he returned again, and paſſed by me to the other end of the mountain; then ſoaring a little as he came near me again; Father, ſays he, I can keep her up, if you can guide her to the poſts. I did ſo, and he ſeemed ſo rejoiced at his flight, and ſo alert upon it, that perceiving with what eaſe it was managed, and how readily it went and returned, and he entreating me to take a turn with him, I at laſt conſented.

CHAP.

CHAP. XIV.

Daniel and Jacob fly together. Shoot over the edge of the mountain, and can't recover it again. Flew out of knowledge. Reflections on their condition. Are in the dark. Daniel's reflections on his wife's fears. See the ſun. Could not diſcern themſelves to move. See a vaſt moon. The eagle tumbles headlong. Jacob rights it again. Sees earth. Alight on a mountain at ſun ſet.

JACOB having brought me to his wiſh, opened his trap door in great joy and let me up; then making all faſt; father, ſays he, lie you, or ſit cloſe to the pump on that ſide, whilſt I work it on this; and ſeeing me ſomewhat fearful, don't be afraid, ſays he, hold by the pump irons, you are as ſafe here as on the ſolid earth; then plying his handle, we roſe, and away we went to the mountain's edge; but going very ſwift, and obſerving, that whilſt I ſat forward, he could not come at the

the other handle, he called to me, to come round to his ſide, whilſt he went on mine; but I being afraid to ſtir, or at leaſt ſo readily as I ſhould, and he being obliged to keep the ſame handle moving till I came round, we had now over-ſhot the mountain, and poſſibly might be three quarters of a mile above the level plains. The ſight of this ſo terrified me, that I could not move a joint, every moment expecting my neck to be broken with a fall. My fear, and his not being able to quit his handle, till he could fairly come at mine, and we now being over the ſea, (for we flew at an immenſe rate) ſomewhat terrified Jacob; and had he been as diſpirited as I was, we muſt both have fallen headlong into it; but keeping up his courage, ſo long as we were on the wing, and as he told me, in no danger of falling, unleſs through our own faults, for want of ballancing right, and ſtill plying the pump, not much minding, (as he afterwards told me) whither he went, imagining he could come the ſame way back again, as ſoon as I was ſo well recovered from my fright, as to be able to ſtir round the pump; we ſtill puſhed on, till I perceiving that we muſt be prodigiouſly higher than we were, and vaſtly above a level with the mountain,

tain, informed him of my fears; and indeed, he then too ſoon diſcovered that we were ſo, and began to be under a violent diſcompoſure himſelf too; but it was rather a time to work, than to ſtand amazed in, and all the hope he had, was my coming round, that we might tack about. In leſs than half an hour, we were out of all ſight of the iſland, which for my own part, I then bad farewell to; but he had ſtill hopes, till beginning to flag a little in his ſtrength, he hinted it to me; but putting ſome of his leaf into his mouth, that recruited his ſpirits, and away we went, not knowing whither to.

Night coming on, I bewailed myſelf, and my poor wife terribly; till Jacob, not able to bear my reproaches, rouſed up his courage, and told me, that he thought I ſhould have more prudence at my years, than to deſpond upon ſuch an accident, as he who could not be ſuppoſed to be endued with my prudence, was reſolved to bear up againſt. He ſaid, men ſhould ſhew themſelves ſuch in every change of fortune, and as we were yet ſafe, though we were flown paſt our knowledge, yet we ought to ſtruggle with every croſs occurrence, till by perſeverance we become conquerors.

This,

This, and much more that Jacob juſtly then urged, awakened me ſomewhat from my dejection, and feeling about, (for it was then almoſt dark) I held by the irons, and was riſing. Stand ſtill, when you are up, ſays he, and move round to my place that way, whilſt I, this way, take yours, and let us ſee if we can't fly back again. I did ſo, and at length he caught the oppoſite handle, and working at it, we imagined we were going homewards again; but it being quite dark, had we been near the iſland we could not have ſeen it; however, the imagination of being homeward bound, kept us in ſome heart; we would willingly have ſtood upon the wing without motion till morning, if we could have done it, but we were not yet adepts enough at flying for that; but that the labouring oar might not altogether lie upon my ſon, I proferred to help him, which he, being a little fatigued, permitted me to do, and I pumped, whilſt he ſat down. This being unuſual labour to me, I was ſoon tired at it, and told him ſo. Pray, father, ſays he, take ſome of my leaf into your mouth, and obſerve if it refreſhes you or not. I did ſo, and ſoon told him, I perceived a very ſenſible alteration, for that I was not only almoſt tired, but very thirſty

thirſty before I took it, and that then I could not ſay I was either; ſo I pumped away for ſome time, and then Jacob came to it again; but which way we went, no one knew, or whether we were higher or lower than before night.

After ſome hours working, and refreſhing alternately, we became in a degree familiarized to our ſtations, and what gave me the deepeſt concern was, to conjecture what my poor wife thought, when ſhe ſaw us paſt the mountain, and aſcending out of her ſight; that, I judged muſt be a heart breaking proſpect, to ſo good and loving a woman as ſhe was; but then, not to know when (if ever) I ſhould return, that reflection cut me to the heart, and held me in agitation, till the morning beginning to break upon us, I was in hopes, by the ſun, to gueſs to what part of the compaſs we were ſteering; but to my prodigious ſurpriſe, all around us ſeemed equally luminous, nor could we by any of the uſual characters of the morning, read in what place the ſun would ſhine firſt; we thought it had been but a ſhort night indeed, though that we took for our fears, which had diſengaged our minds from the thoughts of thoſe tranſactions that we could have meaſured it by; but

but what puzzled me now exceſſively was, that we were in bright day-light, and then immediately ſaw the ſun, all at once, dart upon us very piercingly from the ſereneſt ſky that ever we beheld; and though we pumped ever ſo ſtrong, we could not diſcern whether we moved either upwards, downwards, or ſideways; thus we continued in vaſt ſuſpence, our wings moving with half the force they did before, till upon the next alteration of the ſcene, we found ourſelves almoſt in the dark again. Looking about us every way, we ſaw a vaſt moon beyond us, and at the ſame time the eagle wavering about, quite ſurpriſed us, and ſtruck us into ſuch a terror, that the handle of the pump ſlipping out of my hand, as I wrought at it, and finding the machine to joggle, as if it was going to overſet, I caught faſt hold of the pump iron; and Jacob, who was as much terrified at the accident as myſelf, clinging to his ſeat, we were ſometimes hanging at the bottom, and ſometimes ſideways, and in divers poſitions for a few moments, till the machine righting, as by meer accident, in its fall, Jacob caught hold of the handle neareſt him, and ſet her going again. Our ſurpriſe is no ways to be imagined, and it occaſioned his working

ing but ſlowly at it, till he recovered his ſpirits; the few ſtrokes he gave, only juſt keeping the eagle true to the air; we were then ſenſible that at the height we were, there was need of nothing more to be done, than to keep ourſelves ſteady; and we perceived, that if we ballanced right, the leaſt motion of the wings imaginable would convey us along, ſo that we now floated with very little difficulty to ourſelves, and after paſſing a long way thus, we thought we ſaw a ſmall black ſpot, almoſt beneath us; and obſerving that it grew bigger and bigger, were in great hopes that it was our iſland; but approaching ſtill nearer and nearer, we found ourſelves very much miſtaken, perceiving it to be the whole terraqueous globe. Now we began to rejoice indeed, and finding we had nothing elſe to do, than without uſing force to raiſe us, only to keep ourſelves ſteady till we deſcended, we waited the wiſhed for moment of our alighting ſafe upon terra firma, which we did in leſs than an hour afterwards, juſt at ſun ſet, upon a prodigious high and craggy hill, with vaſt precipices on each hand of us.

CHAP.

CHAP. XV.

Run over their adventures. Sleep under the eagle's wings much longer than a night. See no light. Thoughts of the continued darkneſs. Moon decreaſes. Deſcend the mountain. See ſtrange creatures by moon-light. Hope for day. See the ſun. Stays very long with them. See ſtrange people, &c. Catch one of them. Taſte their food. Does them little good. A multitude of people come to them. They take Daniel and Jacob home with them. Deſcription of their dwellings. Their liquors. Their eatables. Strange proceſſion. Talk of religious ſigns. Dark again. Take leave of their hoſts. Aſcend a mountain for proſpect. See no towns, or habitations. Return to the eagle.

OUR Eagle no ſooner touched the ground, than Jacob opened the trap door, and putting out his feet firſt, he raiſed it gently up with his hands, till he had

had ſlid himſelf out, and then held it up for me. We tenderly embraced each other, and immediately falling upon our knees, returned hearty thanks for our preſervation; then ſetting down on the mountain, and recapitulating the paſt paſſages of our journey, we could ſcarce believe the whole to be more than a dream; but as watching ſo long had made ſleep very neceſſary for us, and our day cloſing in, we reſolved not to deſcend the mountain till morning, and by conſent, laid ourſelves under ſhelter of the eagle's wings, and ſlept very ſoundly, and very long, as we imagined; for though we were both ſure we muſt have ſlept at leaſt a full night, yet it being very dark at our awaking, we from thence concluded, that we muſt have ſlept all the next day too; and that the then preſent, was the ſecond night of our reſidence there; ſo contenting ourſelves under that apprehenſion, we turned about for another nap.

We waked a ſecond time, after a ſecond ſound and long ſleep, as we eſteemed it, from the refreſhment we had received by it; but were ſurpriſed at the darkneſs continuing ſtill, without the leaſt proſpect of day's approach, and believing it might be the depth of winter, in the country we had

had ſettled upon, for we perceived ourſelves very cold,) I began to imagine, that the days being very ſhort there, we might have paſſed them over in our ſleep; and I told Jacob, that I thought it beſt for us to riſe, and ſtir about till morning; for that I had heard, that in ſome parts of the earth, in their winter, they had but little day-light, and in ſome none at all for a long time together; but then, ſays I, the ſun was ſetting when we arrived, and ſurely that is not the laſt time he is ever to ſet in this country; ſo that if we keep awake and watch it, we ſhall certainly find it again, be the day ever ſo ſhort, for it can't be gone all at once thus.

When we aroſe from under the eagle's wings, it was not ſo dark but we could juſt ſee the ſhapes and faces of each other by ſtar-light, and a vaſt full moon that we ſaw, though we could not diſtinguiſh objects far off; ſo we walked about, taking but very ſhort turns, for fear of the precipices we had ſeen about us, at our firſt landing. Longing for the appearance of morning, we ſtirred till we were both weary again, and moon-light ſtill continuing, we ſat down, then walked again in vaſt perplexity; till at length, being aſſured that we had expected day, much

longer than the continuance of any poſſible night, and yet that the moon had not quite paſſed the arch of our hemiſphere, we almoſt deſpaired of ever ſeeing the day-light again.

The moon, which till then had comforted us, by degrees diſappearing, we were in exceſſive fear of total darkneſs; but obſerving, that ſhe appeared much nearer than uſual, as well as larger, which cauſed me many reflections, I imagined, that by ſome accident amongſt the planets, the courſe of the heavens was altered; and ſeeing no ſun, or day, for more ſpace of time than many days, and the moon to my thinking ſo near us, I was confirmed in my opinion, that it muſt be ſo.

We had neither taſted bit, or ſup, ſince we left the iſland, but how long ſince that might be, I could no ways gueſs; for tho' we had a night or two in our firſt flight, I am perſuaded, that ſeveral others were ſwallowed up in that ſerene brightneſs that ſurrounded us for a long time in our paſſage; and then, how long it was ſince our arrival on the earth, we could not tell; The firſt part of our time being ſo dark, and only one continued moon-light, far exceeding in duration the longeſt natural night.

However,

However, our leaf had very well ſupported us, or at leaſt preſerved us, without any ſenſible alteration or decay, either of ſtrength or ſpirits; ſo relinquiſhing the expectation of more light than we had, and our moon by this time decreaſing, and being near to ſetting, we thought that we had better deſcend into the valley, to endeavour after ſome ſuſtenance, whilſt we had light, than to ſtay till our moon would afford us none, when it would be impoſſible to find out our way thither.

With great reſolution, we therefore deſcended, neither ſeeing, or hearing the leaſt creature, or noiſe, all the way we went; till coming near the level ground, where a monſtrous cave gaped to our left hand, we thought we heard ſeveral ſhrill voices, and ſtanding ſtill heard them plainer, but ſo ſhrill, fine, and muſical, that we doubted them to be human. Having paſſed a little way on the level, we ſaw ſeveral things paſs by us, in various ſhapes, that we had never before obſerved; but though ſome of them ſeemed to go erect, yet they were very ſmall and thin, and we could not diſcern their countenances, for their heads ſeemed quite covered with ſomething: One of them ſtopt juſt before us, and by moon-light ſhone

like copper; but ſeeing us ſtep forward, he gave a great ſhriek, and fled, muttering ſomewhat that we did not underſtand.

As we travelled but very ſlow down the deſcent, for fear of danger, we ſlept once or twice e'er we arrived at the bottom; and being now entered on the plains, from whence we could ſee no boundary, ſave that one we had come from, after ſome travel there, we turned to look at the prodigious heighth of it, when to our imagination, it ſhone at the top like gilding, and then we wiſhed we had remained there, believing it to be the reflection of the ſun that we ſaw; and light being ſo deſirable, we had once an inclination to have returned, merely for the ſolace it would have afforded us; but then we ſuſpected it might only be a collection of vapours which deceived our ſight.

We wandered about this plain two days, for though our light was much the ſame, and we had no natural diſtinction of day from night, yet between ourſelves, we called our waking time day, and our ſleeping time night. I ſay, having traverſed this plain about two days, we loſt our moon entirely, but in lieu thereof, found what was much more grateful to us, the light

light of the ſun approaching; and the third day it roſe above the hills.

Its preſence gave us ſuch a flow of ſpirits, that we even forgot our toils and hardſhips. It gave us from the mountain we afterwards climbed up, a proſpect of the moſt romantick country I had ever beheld; there were prodigious mountains, extenſive plains, and immenſe lakes, interſperſed with the vaſteſt plantations of trees that can be imagined, to lie within the compaſs of the eye at once; and then the air was ſo ſerene, thin and tranſparent, that we could ſee diſtinctly, to a diſtance beyond compariſon, to what we ever could before; and what aggravated our extaſies was, that we were now in hopes of not loſing the ſun again, for it ſeemed not, viſibly, to alter its poſition at all.

We entered the groves of trees, and began to ſee ſeveral people, (as we called them) and divers ſorts of cattle, beaſts, and birds, but far different in make, ſhape, and action, from what I had ever ſeen before. The people ſeemed (as I ſaid) of a bright copper colour all over, and had hair ſo thick and long, as when it was juſtly diſtributed all round their head, would almoſt cover their whole body; ſome of theſe we ſaw, juſt upon the ap-

proach of light, but all that preſented after the ſun appeared, had their hairs tied up in a great knot behind, when their bodies being diſencumbered from it they ſhone like gold.

Having ſeen ſo many of theſe people, who only gazed at us, with little round eyes in their ſmall faces, and none of them being any ways armed with what might offend us, we ventured to call to them; but they took no notice, by way of reply, and only moved off the faſter; and indeed were ſo light and nimble of foot, that it would have been a vain purſuit to have followed them; at laſt, turning the corner of ſome tall buſhes one day, and walking pretty faſt, juſt at the angle, one of theſe men (as I call them) met me, breaſt to breaſt; he gave a ſhriek, and I caught him in my arms, which he would have avoided, had I not held him too faſt, till perceiving it would be in vain to ſtruggle with me, he ſubmitted, lifting up his hands, by way of craving my pity. I did not chooſe to ſeem to detain him by force, becauſe of the fright I ſaw him in; nor did I care to let him run away, till I had diſcovered, by his means, the name and ſituation of his country, and who were the inhabitants: Therefore letting go my

my right hand, I clapped it upon his head, and ſtroaking his face, (which was indeed very beautiful, but of too ſmall features for my taſte) in token of my love to him; I deſired him to ſit down, and ſeating myſelf on his left, and Jacob on his right hand, I began to examine him with words, (though I ſuſpected theſe to be inſignificant, as they after appeared to be) and then by geſtures; as to my words he took no notice of them, but my motions he readily comprehended; when pointing to my mouth for food, to go into my ſtomach, and holding up my hands, as ſupplicating him to furniſh me with ſome; he alſo pointed to ſome herbs, that grew about there, and then to his own mouth, ſpeaking in his way, as idly to me, as I had done to him; for his ſounds were not articulate, being moſtly ſhort, and broken aſpirates, and very little variety he ſeemed to have, even of them.

I then made ſigns to him to ariſe, and pointing to the herbs he had before nodded at, I made a ſign to him to pick and eat, which he did, and gave me a parcel; I eat ſome too, but though they ſeemed to fill me, they were ſo light, that they afforded me no nouriſhment, and Jacob obſerved the ſame from them: Then I ſig-

nified to him, that I would know what other things they eat, but ſtill all were herbs; by-and-by an odd ſhapen creature, (as indeed all that we had yet ſeen were) paſſing by us; I pointed to that, and to my mouth; but he ſhook his head, and made ſigns of deteſting to eat ſuch things; then ſpeaking in his way to the beaſt, it turned its head, and anſwered him in its way, and to my thinking pretty much like him.

I tried (on his recommendation) ſeveral other of his eatables, which he produced to me, in the wood I walked with him to; but though the fruits looked freſh and fair, yet they were flat and ſpiritleſs. As to my main queſtions of the name of the place, and the manners of the inhabitants, I could no ways make him underſtand my requeſts, and conſequently, could gather no determinate anſwer from him; and if I could have done it, yet I believe it would have been impoſſible, either for me to have imitated his ſound, or to have formed any letters together, to have expreſſed an idea of it by.

After I had gained all the information I could expect from him, I took him by the hand, and kiſſing him, took my leave of him; but now I could hardly get rid

of

of him; he would bound like a doe to the wood, and bring me ſamples of ſeveral fruits, and was highly delighted when I expreſſed ſatisfaction at any of them, which I frequently did, merely to gratify his good nature; and when he had done ſerving me, he fled over the plain, with ſuch nimbleneſs as ſurpriſed me.

I told Jacob, that this country would not ſubſiſt us; for that the air was ſo thin and the food ſo light, that we ſhould be ſtarved here, but for his leaf, (though I muſt ſay the water was as excellent as I ever taſted any where,) and that if we could but have learned from the ſtranger, where any great town ſtood, we would have travelled to it, for it would be impoſſible to remain long where we were.

Whilſt we were diſcourſing, we ſaw a multitude of the ſame people we had been in company with before, all making towards us, from the oppoſite ſide of the plain; the ſight of ſo many of them, though ſeemingly unarmed, put us into a conſternation, and brought us to conſult our own ſafety. We feared not an equal, or even ſomewhat ſuperior number; but againſt ſo large a body, what could two men do? And flight would be ſo far from ſecuring us, that it would only animate

them to the purſuit, whoſe agility was ſo preferable to our own, that we muſt ſoon be overtaken: For theſe reaſons, we determined to ſtand our ground, undaunted in appearance, however our hearts might be diſtreſſed: We did ſo, and ſoon were given to underſtand, that it was not to commit hoſtilities that we were ſo ſurrounded; for upon their advance to us, every one ſtrove who ſhould preſent us in the humbleſt manner with ſomething that they had brought for our refreſhment; all crowding to touch us but with a finger, upon which they expreſſed great ſatisfaction.

We returned due acknowledgments for their civilities, in the ways we perceived to be moſt ſuited to their capacities; and after long gazing at each other, two of the graveſt of them, took each of them one of us by the hand, and led us croſs the plain, to the part they came from; and paſſing a little wood, took us into the mouth of a large hollow, under a mountain, where we walked at leaſt half an hour, through a long and broad path way, moſt part of the time deſcending, till at laſt we reached a little valley, which, when we looked from the ground upwards, ſeemed juſt like the bottom of a well; the

the rocks and mountains riſing ſo perpendicularly from it on every ſide to a prodigious height; and all round the valley, as I call it, which was it may be a furlong diameter, were holes, either natural or artificial, in which were ſeveral paſſages, of greater and leſſer dimenſions, wherein they had their reſidence.

They offered us of the beſt of every liquor, and eatable they had, though nothing that I ever eat in that country, ſeemed to ſatisfy a craving appetite, but rather excited it. There was indeed amongſt their liquors, one of a charming taſte, much like mead, but richer than I ever taſted any; and this ſuiting my guſt, I drank plentifully of it, and would have drank more, but for fear of its overpowering me, though I perceived no tendency that way.

It was an inexpreſſible concern to me, not to be able either to underſtand them, or they us, ſave in trivial matters. I watched their language, and the application of their ſounds, as narrowly as poſſible; but being, as I thought, all ſo nearly allied, I found it would be in vain to attempt the diſtinction of them, though it was plain, that to each other, they were fully expreſſive and ſignificant.

I made ſeveral motions to be gone, but finding it would be diſagreeable to them, and not knowing whither to go to, we ſtayed ſome time with them, and gathered in one of their harveſts. How they ſow their corn I could not learn, nor did I ſtay long enough with them to ſee; but it grows like graſs, and as thick together, looking juſt like our ſmall ruſhes; theſe blades are filled with a pulp, which when ſo dry as to be criſp and brittle, they roll between two ſtones, and then ſifting it, it produces the lighteſt flower I ever ſaw; this they mix with water, and dry great quantities of it in the ſun, in lumps of a pound, or thereabouts each, and when they want it, (as at eating their herbs) they give it a ſtroke with their hand, and it falls down into crumbles, which they eat by handfuls; but this food alſo, though it fatned them, did us but little ſervice.

I was very deſirous of informing myſelf, whether they had any religion amongſt them, for I had obſerved no ſigns of it as yet; but one day, before I was ſtirring, (for we lay on a ſort of matraſs made of flags, and other light, and warm things,) I was awakened by moſt prodigious ſhrieks from every quarter; and ſtarting up, I ran to ſee what was the matter; when

coming into the valley, I beheld ſeveral hundred people walking round it, in a ſort of proceſſional order, with their arms a-croſs, their heads drooping, and their hair, which before was all tied up in large knots behind, now looſe and pendant, almoſt to the very ground, all round them; reſembling to my fancy, perſons in cloaks, attending a funeral, and ſo indeed I ſuſpected they were; but ſeeing the foremoſt of them take into the paſſage by which we came to the valley, and all the reſt, three by three, taking the ſame rout; Jacob and I gently brought up the rear, wondering all the while what was to ſucceed.

They had no ſooner got into the plain, but they all turned their faces to the ſun, which was then about half buried beneath the mountain tops, at a vaſt diſtance from us, and then wringing their hands, they ſet up ſuch a howling, crying, and ſhrieking, as made the whole plain ring; neither did one of them ſtir a foot from his poſition, or ceaſe howling, till they had quite loſt the ſight of its body, which was a conſiderable time firſt; and then redoubling their outcry, (if poſſible) for a ſhort time, they ceaſed, and returned thro' the paſſage, in the ſame order to the valley again.

After

After their return, I with great difficulty made them underſtand, that I wanted an explanation of their proceedings, with regard to the ſun, which I diſcovered to be the object of their ceremony; and at laſt, by ſeveral means attaining my purpoſe, one of them, as well as he could, made me ſenſible, that the great giver of life had left them, and as they did not know whether he would ever viſit them again, they went to take leave of him, and implore his return. I pitied their ignorance, and attempted to ſhew them, that the ſun which they had been making ſupplications to, was ſo far from being the giver of life of itſelf, that it was but a creature (as we were) of the great Giver of life, and Maker of the world; and would have demonſtrated to them, that he, was only to be beheld by the underſtanding, not by the bodily eye; but I fear, that all my endeavours for their information were abortive, for I could not diſcern them a whit the wiſer for them.

Expecting again the ſame continued darkneſs that had before ſeiſed us, which I had computed to be about the ſame length with their day, I remained very contentedly in the valley with them, during all that time, and had the fortune to

ſee

ſee another proceſſion, with its attendant orizons, offered at its firſt appearance in the oppoſite horizon; from whence, I could conclude nothing elſe, but that it muſt be one long day and night, whilſt the ſun made one revolution; but what could be the meaning of his being ſo ſlow in his circuit in this part of the world, more than in any other I had yet been acquainted with, I could no ways account for, not underſtanding much of aſtronomy.

Upon the next approach of light, I heartily thanked my benign hoſts for all their favours to us, and we took our leave, not being able to learn whitherto we muſt go to find any great cities of inhabitants. The ſun, who uſed to be my guide, both in England, and at the Iſle of Providence, baffling all my former methods of obſervation; ſo Jacob and I got into the plain again, with ſeveral of our hoſts attending us ſo far.

We were in great debate which way to take; but getting upon the oppoſite mountain, which coſt us three of our whole days to aſcend, and was exceſſively high, and being there able to ſee immenſly far about us, without the leaſt ſign of any city or habitation, and a vaſt ſea, or lake, being the extream bounds of our view, we were

were ſo diſcouraged, that (upon further conſideration that night had) we determined to abandon all thoughts of any future land journey, and to betake ourſelves again to the eagle; which would not only be the moſt expeditious, but leaſt fatiguing way we could travel; and having thereby an opportunity of viewing the land all the way we went, we might pitch upon the moſt likely ſpot to alight on.

This being concluded upon, we ſet out the next morning, that is, after we had ſlept, and reſted ourſelves, and deſcending the mountain, we re-croſſed the plain to the hill we firſt alighted upon, where we found the eagle ſafe, on the ſame ſpot where we had left it.

CHAP.

CHAP. XVI.

Mount the eagle. The face of the country. Are in the dark. See the ſun before them. The eagle totters and turns over, yet both ſit ſafe. Dark again. At day-light ſee a city. Make towards it. Are ſhot at. Fly over it. Daniel inſiſted on landing on the next earth. See land. Puſh for it. It is a rock. Alight. Overſhoot themſelves, and fall into a deep pit. Their terror on hearing a voice. Jacob fears the devil. A light brought by two horrid figures. Deſcription of them. Their diſcourſe. Deſcription of the cave. Eat fiſh. Daniel relates part of his journey. The monſter's ſurpriſe. Go to reſt. Are ſurpriſed at the furniture. Their reflections.

OUR leaf, which had ſtood us in ſo much ſtead, and without which we could not have ſubſiſted ſo long upon the light diet we had found in this country, was now

now almoſt all conſumed, (though we had been as ſparing of it as poſſible for ſome time) which was an additional argument to preſs our departure; ſo after we had reſted, and ſurveyed our eagle, finding it, upon Jacob's report, very capable of performing, we got up, and ſhutting our door after us, made an eſſay to riſe, Jacob being of opinion that we might do it, though ſhe ſtood upon the flat ground, till ſeveral repeated trials convinced him to the contrary.

Thus diſappointed, we had a long way to fetch poles to fix it on, which gave us no ſmall unneaſineſs, till Jacob ſpying a large ſtone, with my aſſiſtance, rolled it towards a little hillock like a mole hill, then drawing the eagle to it, and placing one part of the iron ring on the hilloek, and the oppoſite part on the ſtone, I got in firſt, and then he followed and cloſed the door; but we now lying on one ſide, could not freely work the wings, till he bid me ſtand forward, with my legs wide, and ſway firſt one way then the other, which raiſing the eagle by turns from ſide to ſide, Jacob took advantage of, and ſoon, with quick ſtrokes ſet it on float. Being near the mountain's edge, we were preſently over the plain, upon a body of

air

air ſufficient to carry us any whither. We took the way croſs the plain, and over the hill, whence we had viewed the country, minding not to work too hard, but juſt to keep her on a level, without mounting; thus we ſkimmed along at a vaſt rate, and with ſo much eaſe, that it was amazing: Yet though we had covered ſuch a tract of land, we had not ſeen one habitation; but people we had at times beheld innumerable, all of whom, we ſuppoſed, had their reſidence in ſuch manner as our late hoſts had; for the whole face of the country was very much broken, with prodigious riſings, and as hideous depths.

Our time for the ſun to ſet again, was not above two thirds run, ſo that we were out of fear of being benighted we thought; but all on a ſudden, as I may ſay, (for it was in the ſpace of leſs than an hour, from the ſun's ſeeming very bright, as our backs were towards it as we were croſſing a large ſea,) upon looking behind us, the ſun was ſetting; and before we had got from over the water, it was dark; ſave that we had the moon and ſtar-light. This vexed us horridly, nor could we fathom out the meaning of it; but we ſtill went on, when thinking, by the motion, that we were ſinking, I bad Jacob let me come to the handle,

handle, for that I was afraid he was tired, and I gave him for reaſon, becauſe I thought the eagle ſunk, which, I told him we muſt take care to prevent, till it became light again; for I had by this time changed my opinion as to the regularity of the days and nights, and took them to be quite arbitrary.

Now whether we really ſunk or not, as I thought, or whether Jacob mended his ſtroke at the handle or not, and ſo raiſed us higher than we ought to have been, I can't ſay; but ſo it was, that when, after a long flight, which had almoſt ſpent us both with working, we firſt began to ſee the ſun again, it was before us, and we out of all view and proſpect of earth, or the leaſt ſpeck in the univerſe; neither was there ſo much as a cloud to be ſeen, but all pure, and ſerene round us.

I ſhould now have been glad of ſomewhat to eat, finding myſelf ſo light, and to breath without labour; but what perplexed me moſt was, to think how we, who came a ſtrait courſe from the ſun, ſhould now meet it before us; this ſeemed unaccountable to me; but we had now been ſo accuſtomed to the eagle, that we had no fear of falling, and that kept us in heart.

It

It is impoſſible to ſay how long we had been upon the wing, for want of regular days and nights; but it muſt have been a great while, and though neither of us had ſlept a wink, neither of us ſeemed to want it. I took a mouthful of leaf now, which Jacob told me, was almoſt my laſt, for that he had not ſix more in his pocket; but as one would laſt us a great while, we were in hopes to reach ſome place or other before it was all ſpent.

Jacob had plied the handle, as he thought, but ſlowly; upon which, I told him, that I thought him in the wrong, and that unleſs he wrought more briſkly at it, we ſhould never ſee an end of our journey; for we were not ſenſible, whether we proceeded forwards, mounted higher, or ſunk lower. I then taking the handle myſelf, worked at it a great while, till I felt the eagle totter, juſt as it did in the firſt flight; upon which I gave it to Jacob again, and ſitting down with my back againſt the pump, which was my uſual poſture, I put both my arms under the irons, which fixed the pump to the floor. My labour had inclined me to drowſineſs, and I had juſt forgot myſelf, when Jacob cried out, take care father, and immediately claſping hold of the pump himſelf, the

the eagle pitched quite over, and proceeded, without ever once wagging more. We wondered at it, and eſpecially, that in the turn, we did not ſeem the leaſt likely to fall; and though we were ſure we flew upon our heads, in reſpect to our former poſition, yet both Jacob ſtood, and I ſat, as little liable to fall as ever we did, and ſeemed to be ſtill with our heads upwards. We conſidered how this was poſſible to happen, and many reaſons paſſed on each ſide, pro and con; but it being ſomething above our comprehenſion, and feeling no inconvenience from it, we reſted very much contented, that it was no worſe.

We now viſibly perceived the eagle to ſink, and therefore humoured it; for we were ſuch proficients, that give us but daylight, we could raiſe or fall it at pleaſure; and by proper ballancing, have floated for half an hour together, with very little motion of the wing. We had not been long turned thus, before we were in utter darkneſs again, which by no means ſuited with us; but fearing nothing, we patiently waited the return of day.

At the next dawn, when we were able to deſcry objects at a diſtance, we found ourſelves near the ſurface of the earth, over the water, and within a little diſtance

of ſome very large ſea port, and made towards it; I deſcribing to Jacob the buildings, and pointing to the ſhips in the harbour, and others riding before the port.

This was a joyful ſight to Jacob, who had ſo long fed himſelf upon the hopes of a proſpect of this nature. Father, ſays he, is that England? I told him, it was much if it ſhould; but that it might as well be that, as any other place, for ought that I as yet knew; however, I told him, we would make towards it and ſee; and accordingly we puſhed for it; but taking notice of an high hill, juſt on the back of the town, and overlooking it, I bad him ſpring away with all his force for that hill, where we would alight, and from thence walk down to the town.

Jacob, in hopes of gratifying his old curioſity, worked at the pump with all his might, which not only drove us forward at a prodigious pace, but had raiſed us conſiderably higher than we were before, and I obſerved e'er we reached the city, that the whole inhabitants, (who I ſuppoſe had collected together, upon the ſight of us in the air) were crowding near the ſhore, and in the ſtreets of the town to view us. Jacob had never ſeen ſuch a ſight in his days, and was mightily pleaſed with it; but

but in the height of his ſatisfaction, one of the ſhips in the harbour fired a ſhot at us, which went through one of our wings, (though as providence would have it, did no further damage, than making a ſingle round hole in it;) this put us into ſuch a conſternation, for fear of more of the like uſage, that plying with all our might, we ſoon overſhot both the town and the hill, and after the firing of abundance of ſmall arms at us to no purpoſe, were ſafe out of their reach.

This laſt adventure, had ſo blunted the edge of Jacob's appetite for company, and that good opinion he had conceived of the ſociety of mankind, that he now heartily wiſhed himſelf at home again; as I alſo did from my ſoul, but had not the leaſt hope of ever attaining it. Had I but been verſed in maritime affairs ſufficiently to have diſcovered the latitude I was in, and had but known that of the Iſle of Providence; or had we expected ſuch a flight, and ſo taken a compaſs with us, we might ſtill have made ſomewhat of it; but all was againſt me, my life drawn out to a great age, and myſelf a flying vagabond, without a home: Theſe thoughts ſunk my hopes intollerably; and now Jacob was ſo ſet againſt the ſight of mankind, that on the leaſt view of a town, or inhabitants, he

he fell to the handle, and we muſt ſoar out of their reach.

At length, being tired with this way of life, and being then floating over the ſea, in ſight of no land; I told him, that if he would not at all hazards promiſe to ground me at the next ſpot we came to, be it where it would, I was reſolved to caſt myſelf from the eagle, and finiſh at once a miſerable life, too unhappy to be longer ſuſtained with comfort, in the way we were in. Theſe words drew tears into Jacob's eyes; Dear father, ſays he, don't break my heart, and render my condition ſtill more wretched, by your diſpleaſure to me; be eaſy, and I promiſe you to ſet you upon the firſt ground we ſee, which for your ſake, I hope will not be far off.

I was conſtrained to return him ſome comfortable anſwer, to diſſipate his dejection, and in the evening, we both imagined we ſaw land: This gave us great pleaſure, but the fear of night's coming upon us before we reached it, ſunk us again. I would not for all the world have miſſed the opportunity of alighting, by overſhooting it in the dark; and, as the fool thinks himſelf a better judge than the wiſe man in matters of gratification to himſelf; ſo I thought, that Jacob's ſtrength, (tho'

of twice the force of my own) would not carry us ſo ſoon thither as mine; I therefore took from him the handle, and toiling till I ſweat, could not, at laſt, but think it in better hands before; ſo I reſigned my poſt, and he ſhooting away, like an arrow out of a bow, we in very good time made our point.

We had light enough left, to ſee that what we had pleaſed ourſelves with as land, was only a long ledge of rocks, broken and very craggy, running a great way in length, but not very broad, and made up of ſeveral diſtinct pieces of ſtone, at leaſt towards the top, ſo far as we could ſee; for the ſea flowed in between, and through them, in many parts.

This land, as we expected it to be, proving ſo diſcommodious, I told Jacob, I was ſorry we had fallen upon ſo barren a ſpot, and that I thought it would be only loſing time to ſtop there; and that we had better go in queſt of a more agreeable country, which perhaps we might ſee by morning. Father, ſays Jacob, I ſhould be glad to concur with you, but muſt beg you to alter your reſolution; for on your anger and uneaſineſs, I then made a vow to myſelf, that I would ſtop at the firſt place I could ſet a foot on, though

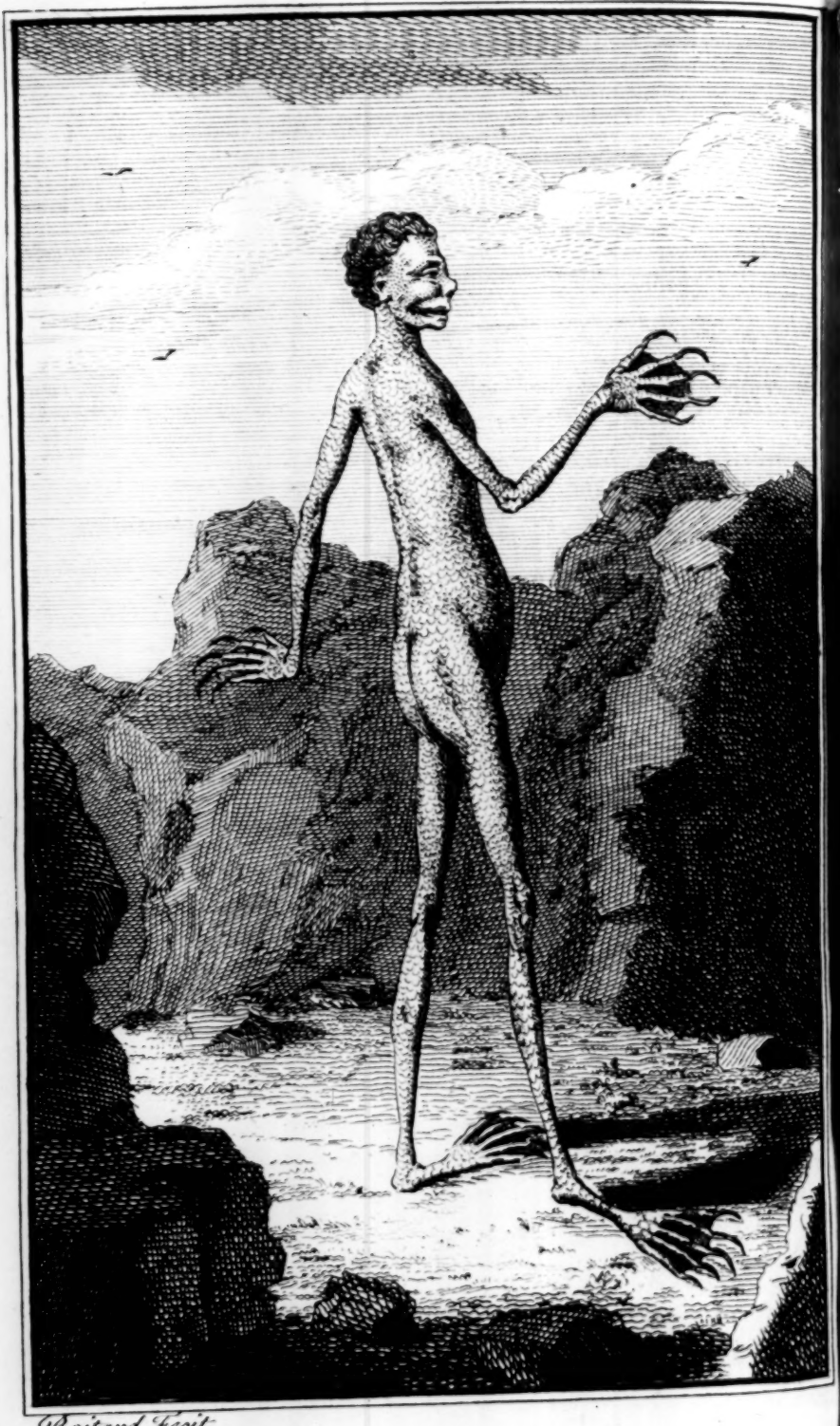
though the devil himſelf ſhould oppoſe me; ſo muſt beg of you to reſt here. Well, ſays I, Jacob, I will not cauſe a breach of your vow, though we depart again in the morning, ſet me down where you think convenient.

Jacob thanked me, and ſeeing a flat, (as there was very few of them) big enough, as he judged for our purpoſe, juſt before which was a monſtrous deep, but narrow precipice, (though we did not apprehend it to be ſo deep as it was,) he endeavouring to lower the eagle upon that flat, but over-ſhooting it, we both fell perpendicularly down the precipice, as we ſat upon the eagle: The ruſtling of the fall, and the ſcratching of the ribs of the wings againſt the ſtone all the way, made the moſt diſmal din that I ever heard; and the reſiſtance they made againſt the ſides of the precipice, retarding our fall, made us ſuſpect, that we ſhould never reach the bottom; but our fall was by that means ſo broken, that we neither of us received more harm by it, than what the fright gave us.

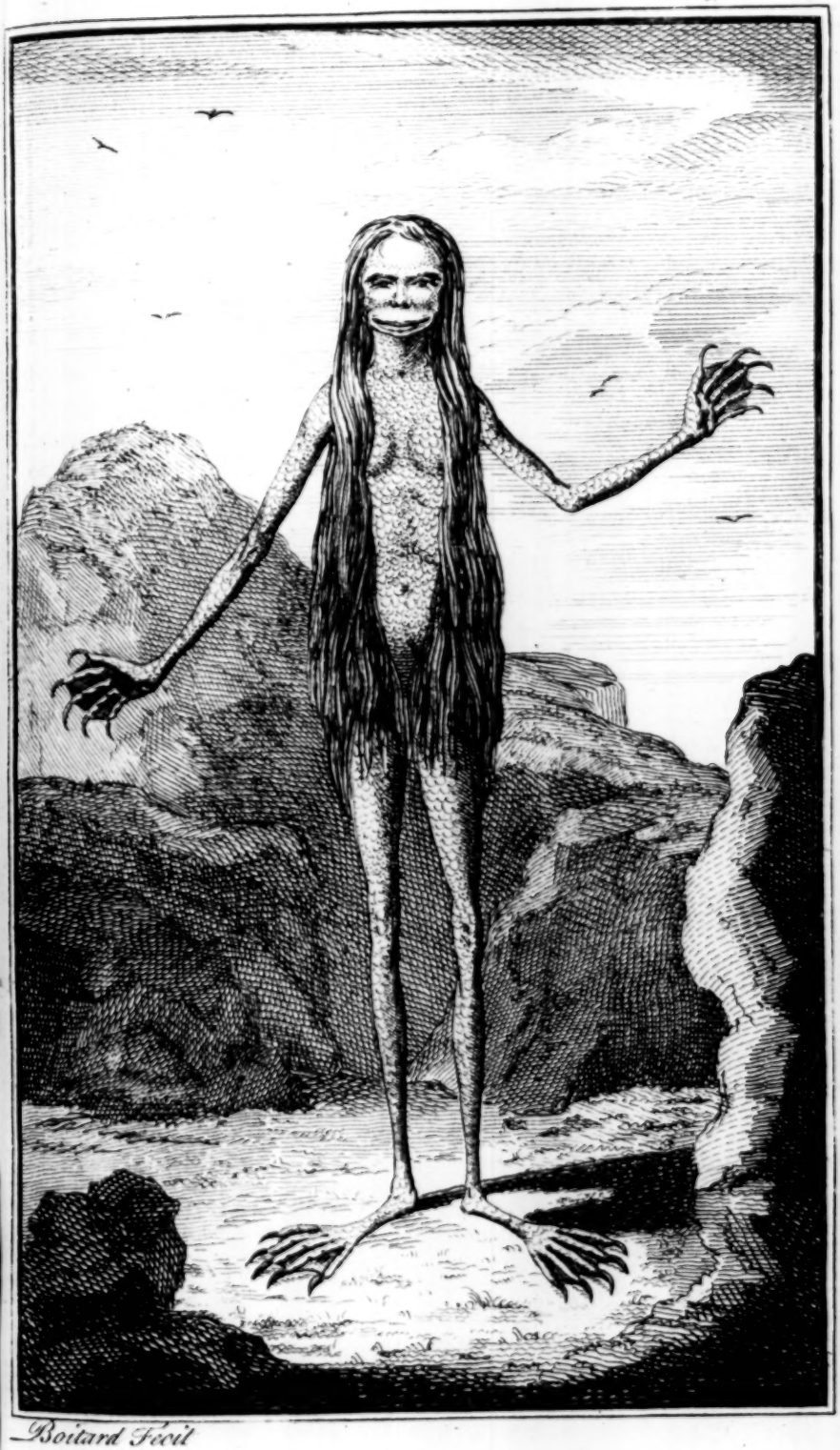
It being night, and the cavity of aſtoniſhing depth, it was as dark as pitch at the bottom; to which we were no ſooner arrived, but we heard a loud articulate

voice roar out, and ſay ſomething, though at the diſtance we were from it, and by reaſon of the vaſt hollow wherein it was confined, we could not tell what; our hairs, at this, ſtood erect upon our heads, and Jacob's vow immediately ſtaring him in the face; O father, ſays he, this is the devil, that I ſo raſhly dared to oppoſe my landing, and immediately he fell to his prayers; I was no leſs confounded, when I heard it again, roar out in the ſame articulate ſound, to my thinking, as before, ſyllable for ſyllable; and though I underſtood it not, it made a prodigious impreſſion upon me. We were both mute and ſtill, neither ſtirring hand or foot; till upon the third repetition of the ſame ſound, as I was then ſure it was; and thinking with myſelf, if any perſon was near, and heard us fall, the moſt natural thing that they could aſk was, who was there? and judging this voice might mean ſo, I replied, here are only two honeſt diſtreſſed travellers, who by misfortune are fallen into this pit. How? ſays the voice, (for I then perceived it to be nearer to us) are you Engliſhmen? We are, ſays I, and humbly beg your kind aſſiſtance, whoever you are, for you ſeem by your ſpeech, to be our countryman. Stay where you

BRITISH
20 JY 63
MUSEUM



Boitard Fecit



Boitard Fecit

BRITISH
20 JY 03
MUSEUM

you are, ſays the voice, till I come, and you ſhall be aſſiſted. Then the voice calling out aloud, Calipſe, Calipſe, with a ſound that made the vault echoe, we heard a ſofter voice ſay, I am coming; and preſently a light appearing at a diſtance, moved towards us.

We could plainly diſcern, that we were at the mouth of a vaſt cavern, and that the light, which ſeemed to be brought up by a naked woman, had turned into a ſort of door-way in the wall of it, when all continued dark for the ſpace of about two minutes; and then, the light returning, we ſaw confuſedly by it, the ſhape of an elderly man, with ſhort, buſhy hair, coming towards us, with the woman; but ſurely, two ſuch figures, (when they were ſo nigh as to be diſcerned) were never beheld before; they bore the exact reſemblance of the human ſpecies in their erect poſture and limbs, ſave their mouths were as broad as their whole faces, and had very little chins; their arms ſeemed all bone, and very thin, their hands had very long fingers, and webbed between, with long claws on them, and their feet were juſt the ſame, with very little heel; their legs and thighs long, and ſtrait, with ſtrong ſcales on them, and the other parts of their bo-

dies were exactly human, but covered with the ſame hair as a ſeal.

The man, in a very friendly manner, aſked who we were, and from whence we came? We told him Engliſhmen, and that our alighting here was merely accidental. Were you ſhipwrecked, ſays he? I told him, no, we came in the air. Came in the air, ſays he? You are in my power, don't imagine I will be impoſed upon: How came you hither, I ſay? I aſſured him, that we had been weeks in the air, upon a machine of our own contrivance, and that in trying to ſettle upon the rock, we had over-reached ourſelves and fallen in here; and that the thing he then ſaw us ſtanding upon, was our machine, which having fallen in with us, by breaking our fall, had ſaved our lives; this I pronouncing with ſo great an air of ſincerity, he believed, and deſired us to walk in, and he would take care of us; but poor Jacob, who could not all this while but think it was the devil, was ſcarce to be prevailed upon by any entreaties to quit his poſt.

I own, that to judge by appearances only, myſelf, or any one elſe, would have ſuſpected him to be in the right; but yet, having no other choice, and being ſatisfied, that if it ſhould be ſo, he wanted

wanted not means to compel us; I thought it better to comply with a good grace, than to ſuffer abuſe by a refuſal; ſo I ſtepped off the machine, and went to him, which Jacob obſerving, and that I received no inſtant miſchief, followed me.

The woman led the way with her light, which I then perceived to be a lamp, made of the ſhell of ſome ſea fiſh, with a thick wick, giving a very ſtrong but ſmoaky glare. The man took me by the hand, (his being damp and cold like ice) and led me, and Jacob followed us. We were conducted into a large dark room in the ſide of the rock, where was a bench made of a rough ſhip's plank, and another broad board, one end of which was thruſt into a chink in the rock, the other ſtanding out about two yards into the room, and which, by the woman's ſetting the lamp upon it, I ſuppoſed to be their table.

The firſt thing the man ſaid when we were ſeated was, to enquire how we would be treated, and what we had occaſion for. I told him, we were at preſent in moſt want of food, having had none all the time of our flight. Are not you men? ſays he. Surely, ſays I. Then why will you offer to deceive me, ſays he? Am

not I, think you, a competent judge of man's capacity? Do I not know that human nature cannot ſupport under a faſt, for ſo long as you aſſure me you have been in flight? If that be not falſe; for you would by this latter aſſertion, induce me to ſuſpect the truth of your former.

I perceiving that he gave no credit to me, could attempt no ſurer means of obtaining his confidence, than by explaining the original method of our flight, and alſo revealing the means, by which we had endured under ſo long a reſtraint from food; ſo I told him my original ſtory, and the ingenuity of my ſon Jacob, in contriving the machine; how we were unexpectedly carried out of our knowledge, and all that had befallen us ſince; with Jacob's having accidentally diſcovered an herb, which preſerved in the mouth, would prevent both hunger and thirſt; and told him, that by reaſon of our long abſence from home, it being now very near exhauſted, how happy we eſteemed ourſelves, in being providentially conducted to his habitation, from whoſe humanity we had hopes of a ſupply.

He lifted up his hands and eyes; Great Father, ſays he, what have I heard? And hath all this been done by a worm?

A creature ſeemingly pinned down to earth, whoſe natural bulk, and tendency to the center, ſhould render ſuch attempts a violence to nature? But who can diſcern the methods of thy providence? And am I, poor miſerable creature, the firſt of thy innumerable beings upon this earth, that am to be informed by a ſpecial meſſenger of our neighbour world, which I have ſo often contemplated, and have been amazed at? Am I, I ſay, the firſt, to whom the truth of that new world hath been diſcovered? And am I now in converſation with an inhabitant of it; (as I may ſay) one who hath arrived from thence, and is capable of demonſtrating, that all our human wiſdom is not founded barely upon ſuppoſitions, and poſſibilities only? But, ſir, ſays he, I detain you from what will be of more immediate ſervice to you, than my reflections upon your travels; then going to the door, he called Calipſe, and ordered her to bring in ſome fiſh and water, with both which ſhe ſoon returned, and ſet them upon the table; I then deſired to know, if he had any fire, or any thing to boil them in? (for they were dryed fiſh.) He ſaid, that he perceived what I meant, from a remembrance he had of the methods his father uſed be-

fore he eat them; but told me, that he and his family always eat them raw, either as they came from the ſea, or as they were dryed, for they had a natural antipathy to ſodden meats; but he ſaid, he believed he had ſome inſtruments by him for my purpoſe, which his father and mother, when living, dreſſed their fiſh in. I told him, that our ſtomachs ſeemed at preſent rather too keen, to want either the incentives of dreſſing or ſauce, and that we would try how we could behave without either; but that if it ſhould be our fortune to make any ſtay with him, we ſhould be obliged to him for the uſe of the things he had mentioned.

We then pulled out our knives, and to it we went, rather devouring the fiſh than eating it; neither did we at firſt reflect either on ſmell, taſte, or the gratification of any particular ſenſe, they had all ſo great an intereſt in the repaſt; but beginning to ſlacken in our pace, and to feed more moderately, I had time to wonder, how it was poſſible for their dryed fiſh to be ſo juicy and tender, and made bold to aſk the queſtion; at the ſame time, aſſuring the old gentleman, that all I had ever before ſeen, had required length of time to ſoak and ſoften before it was fit for the

teeth

teeth to mandicate; he ſaid, his method of curing them was, only drying them in the ſun, firſt drawing their entrails through the gills, which when done, he piled them on heaps in ſome dry part of the cave.

Having compleated our meal, and waſhed it down with a delicious draught of water, we returned our compliments of thanks to our generous benefactor, who from the frequent expreſſions of his tenderneſs and concern for us, had rendered himſelf far leſs ſhocking to us, than at firſt he ſeemed to be.

He told us, after our meal, that he made no great doubt of our deſire for reſt, after ſo long a fatigue as we had undergone; ſo that if we pleaſed, he would ſhew us our lodging, and leave us for that night, and that if we choſe it, we ſhould have a lamp burning by us; we told him, that would be very acceptable, and following him, he conducted us into a ſmall room, where to our great ſurpriſe, was a wooden bedſtead, with bedding upon it, two chairs, a table, and a pocket glaſs lying on it, with a little cabinet ſtanding on the table; there he left us, wiſhing us a good repoſe.

When the old man was departed, Jacob and I were under greater perplexity

than before, at the ſight of all this order and regularity. Look you father, ſays Jacob, don't you now believe, that this creature who talks like a man, is no leſs than the devil himſelf? Why you know, and have told me, that he wheedles and tempts people by a proſpect of riches and fine things, till he has ſeduced their hearts from their maker, and then he ſeizes upon them for his own property. Now don't you think theſe things, this good bed and conveniencies, which we could never have expected here, are a ſnare to entice us to love him?

I was unwilling to encourage Jacob in his way of thinking, but yet, could ſcarce with a ſafe conſcience deny his argument; for I had myſelf heard of many tricks, ſhapes, and transformations of the devil in old ſtories; and as for the place we ſeemed to be in, none appeared to me to be more proper for his exerciſes; but yet, I ſay, not to encourage Jacob in his way of thinking, I told him, that we ought not to diſpraiſe the bridge we had come ſafely over; for we had been entertained in a friendly manner, and ought not to ſuſpect our hoſt of ill deſigns till we found him tardy; therefore we ought to be upon our guard, that he drew us into no ſin; and then,

then, I was in hopes, though he ſhould prove the devil, he would have no power over us. Thus having adminiſtered the moſt comfort to Jacob and myſelf, that I could, we both laid ourſelves down in our cloaths, and ſlept moſt ſweetly till morning, waking exceedingly refreſhed and lively.

CHAP. XVII.

Their ſurpriſe next morning, Get ſeveral utenſils. Daniel views the rock with the monſter. Relates his journey. Other diſcourſe on his travels. Monſter very learned. Satisfies Daniel he had been in the moon. Monſter gives account of his parents. Their being caſt upon that rock. What his nature is. Laments his deformity. Daniel comforts him.

IN the morning, whilſt we were both awake, and lay muſing on what was to follow, comes our hoſt, the old man, to ſee how we did, and if we wanted any thing. Jacob, who ſaw him firſt, ſlunk down under the rug which we had cover-

ed

ed us with, but with ſuch eagerneſs and commotion, that I opened my eyes to diſcover what ailed him, when I eſpied the old man cloſe by the bedſide; I was not without my fears, but I bid him good-morrow. O, ſays he, good morrow, how have you reſted? I aſſured him never better, and that now we would get up; ſo throwing off the rug, we aroſe. He then bidding us take up our lamp and follow him, we went croſs the great arch into another room, where he ſhewed us abundance of kitchen utenſils, which he told us were his father's; for, ſays he, he was juſt ſuch a man as you are, and made conſtant uſe of them.

I had a month's mind to have then aſked him, how he and his family came to be ſo miſhapen; but fearing it might affront him, I judged it better to be ſilent, at leaſt till we had been longer acquainted; ſo deſiring I might have the uſe of a large ſauce-pan, a frying-pan, a grid-iron, two or three plates and diſhes, and a copper pot; he bid me to take them, or any thing elſe I ſhould find uſeful to me; then, having loaded Jacob with what I ſuppoſed we ſhould want, we retired.

Having made another good meal of the dried fiſh, I ſat Jacob (who was now much better reconciled to the old man, from his courteous

courteous behaviour to us) to clean the kitchen utenſils, whilſt the old man and I went out into the air; for I told him, I had been ſo much uſed to free breathing, that I could very ill bear confinement in ſo cloſe a place. He ſhewed me a way round the ſide of the rock, and told me, if I had any inclination to take a proſpect, he would accompany me to the top of it, which offer I readily accepted.

I perceived that we were not more than five yards above the level of the ſea, at the mouth of the cave, but there were ſo many turnings and windings to the water, that it might be near two hundred paces to the edge of the rock, before we came to the ocean: We firſt went thither, that being the place, he told me, his father had landed at, when he was caſt upon the rock; then returning back again ſome paces, we entered into a narrow cliff in the ſtone, to which the light came in at a vaſt heighth above us, (as it did wherever we walked at the bottom, for wherever there was a paſſage at the bottom, the rock ſeemed to be ſplit, or cut quite up to the top, except in the cavern) having gone ſome way in this paſſage, we gradually aſcended round ſeveral pieces of entire ſtone; at the bottom of which we could both

ſee

ſee and hear the water daſhing; and often being obliged to ſtep over broad chinks, which were very frightful to behold; we at laſt arrived at the height of the rock; but ſuch a broken and confuſed proſpect ſurely was never ſeen, and all around was nothing but water.

I was in hopes I might have eſpied ſome land, but could ſee nothing like it, nor had I the leaſt view of ever quitting my preſent abode; for I did not doubt, but that the eagle was too much ſpoiled by the fall, ever to be repaired again, in a place ſo deſtitute of ſupplies as we were in. The old man obſerving me to be thoughtful, deſired me to ſit down in the ſhade, (the ſun ſhining very hot,) and ſaid, he waited with great impatience, for a further account of my life and travels.

I touched but lightly over the cauſe of my leaving England, or any other occurrence, till I got on ſhore in the Iſle of Providence; but enlarged much more fully on my tranſactions there: I told the old man, that the perſon we left behind was my ſon, and that I having inſtructed him in the ſmith's buſineſs, his invention was ſo pregnant, as to form the machine on which we had flown to his rock, and to which he had given the name of his eagle.

I long to examine it, ſays he, and ſee how he has contrived it, capable of conveying two human bodies in the air. But pray, ſays he, how came you to venture to fly to ſuch a diſtance, as the country you mentioned laſt night? I told him, that when we were out of ſight of land, we were obliged to go on, over the ſurface of the ſea, and that then the day cloſing upon us in our flight, by the time that the morning light appeared, we could neither ſee ſea or land; ſo that not knowing whither we went, but ſtill going on, we travelled a long time together in pure day, with the ſun always up, till we ſettled at laſt, as I told him before, on the great mountain at ſun ſet.

My companion then aſked me, how long we continued in this flight? I told him, it was impoſſible to form any juſt computation of that; becauſe that after one night paſſed, we never had any more, though ſeveral might have paſſed in the time, which was what we greatly wondered at. Nothing ſo eaſy to be accounted for, ſays he, why had you not loſt ſight of the earth? I told him, we had loſt ſight of every thing but the ſun; then what, ſays he, ſhould obſtruct the ſun's continual ſhine upon you, when you ſaw nothing elſe

elſe to intervene? I told him we ſaw the earth again, long before we reached it, or loſt the ſun. True, ſays he, but not our earth. Our earth, ſaid I? Why pray what other earth is there but our earth? perhaps you think this rock is all the earth there is. No, no, ſays he, you are miſtaken; I know the ſeveral regions of the earth, and how, and into what kingdoms it is divided, though I have been ſo unhappy as to ſpend my life in this loanſome manner; but yet, I tell you, you alighted not on this earth; that is, this habitable world, compounded of earth, and water, containing Europe, Aſia, Africa, and America. It is true, ſays I, that we knew not on which quarter we ſettled; but that it was in ſome part of one of them is undeniably certain. I perceive, ſays he, you are but a ſhallow aſtronomer. Pray, how long did you tell me your firſt night was in that country? That, ſays I, is impoſſible to ſay, becauſe it being ſo much longer than a common night, we had no fixed term to meaſure by. Was it three days long, ſays he? I replied, it muſt be more than that; for to the beſt of my judgment, we lay ſtill as long, expecting day, before we roſe to look about us. Was it a week, ſaid he? I replied,

that

that I believed it was more. Was it a fortnight, ſaid he? Truly, ſays I, it might, for ought I know; but why are you ſo inquiſitive about that? Becauſe, ſays he, much depends upon it; and I think, ſays he, your day, when it returned, was as long as your night had been. I told him, to the beſt of my conjecture it was. Then, ſays he, you have been where never man was before. You have been in the moon; and what confirms me in it is, that if I remember right, you told me, you thought once that you were falling, and actually turned over. It is moſt certain we did ſo, ſays I; that circumſtance, ſays he, accounts to me for the whole; beſides what you have ſaid of the inhabitants, the plants, the air, and all the reſt.

I could not for my life conceive, why being ready to fall, but recovering, ſhould be any indication of our having been in the moon, and told him how unreaſonable I thought it was in him, from thence to draw ſuch a concluſion. Come, ſays he, I'll ſatisfy you of it. Don't you think that the great body of the earth will obſtruct the light of the ſun, ſo far as the ſhadow of the earth's body will extend; that is, ſo long as you, at any given diſtance, can be ſenſible of the earth's body lying

lying between you and the ſun? Yes ſurely, ſays I, the earth will then darken, and hide the ſun from me. Well, ſays he, but if you are ſo far off, as not to be ſenſible of the interpoſition of the earth, what will then be the conſequence? Then, ſays I, I ſhall ſee the ſun only. Why, that was your very caſe, ſays he, when you came to that diſtance; and from that time, till you arrived on the mountains in the moon, it was day-light. I told him, I had not thought ſo deeply of it, but it ſeemed very plain. Then, ſays he, you ſay you arrived at ſun ſet, and had a fortnight's night; what can that be, but arriving at the dark half of the moon, with whoſe inhabitants, a month is but a natural day? Believe me, ſays he, you have been there, however you got thither, or returned. Again, ſays he, don't you know that the earth attracts all bodies within ſuch a diſtance to it? I ſaid, I had heard ſo; and ſo does the moon, replied he; and when you came within her attractive force, if you had not turned round, and ſunk regularly downwards to her, you muſt have ſeemed to fall headlong all the way.

I ſtood in amaze at his diſcourſe, and aſked him, how it was poſſible for one who lived ſo recluſe from all the world, to have

have obtained ſo much knowledge in theſe things; for that he did not ſeem to be very old, and that moſt ſciences that I had ever heard of, had been brought to perfection not by one man, but by the accumulated obſervations of many. He told me, he would not have me attribute his knowledge to his own peculiar induſtry, or obſervation; but to the indulgent care that a learned parent took in his education. I ſaid, he had ſeveral times mentioned his father to me, and that I ſhould be extremely glad, if he would diſcover to me who he was.

He then told me, that his father's name was Miles Anderſon, that he had had a publick education in the univerſity of Oxford in England, and was generally reckoned to have attained to great perfection, in moſt of the liberal ſciences; that about his fortieth year, he married a rich heireſs, hoping thereby, to have at one ſtroke compleated his fortune; but her ſubſtance being all in her guardian's hands, an alderman of London, who refuſed to pay it; before it could be recovered by law, the guardian failed, and his father loſt every penny of his wife's portion.

He ſaid, that his father's learning had acquired him many friends, (though he had

had but ſmall ſubſtance of his own) who, in a ſhort time procured him a government of one of the new forts, the Engliſh had erected on the coaſt of Africa. I have heard him often mention with tears in his eyes, ſays he, the parting from his friends in England with my mother, then a young and beautiful woman, for a ſituation ſo detached from all his former acquaintance, and ſo contrary to his natural, contemplative, and ſtudious genius; but, as he uſed to ſay, neceſſity had no law.

My father, ſays he, told me, that in ſouth latitude, fifteen degrees, he met with a violent tempeſt at north weſt, which lying upon them for many days, drove them out of all way, and obliged them to cut their maſts by the board, and in the violence of it, he ſaid, that they were thrown upon this rock, at the weſtern end, where the ſhip was beaten to pieces, but the boat ſaved, with only ſeven hands, who had eſcaped hither in her, beſides himſelf and my mother. He told me, they at times got moſt of his goods out of the wreck, and ſearching for ſhelter, at length found the cave he lived in. That they all dwelt together for near a year, till the proviſions growing ſhort, which they had taken from the ſhip, the mariners de-

termined to quit the rock in the boat, (which they had fitted up as well as they could, with materials ſaved from the wreck) and ſeek their fortunes. They would have had my father to have ventured with them; but he, who tenderly loved my mother, and for that reaſon was fearful of her ſafety, refuſed; but made them all take an oath, that in caſe they ſhould ever be ſo fortunate as to reach any port, they would not fail to ſend ſome ſhip to his relief; but he always believed, he ſaid, that they periſhed at ſea, having never heard any thing from them.

It was not long, he ſaid, after their departure, before his proviſions were near ſpent, and he and my mother were reduced to ſhort allowance, when no tongue could paint the miſery he daily ſuffered on her account, more than on his own. They then daily went to different parts of the rock, to try for fiſh to ſupport nature, and were frequently ſo happy as to take ſome.

Soon after this, my mother proving with child, that again threw my father into great melancholy, to think of producing an infant to be partaker of his calamity; but as they had now gotten into the method of taking fiſh, by ſeveral devices they

they had found out to entrap them with, they were the eaſier for it; at length, my mother's time came, when ſhe was delivered of myſelf and my ſiſter, or my wife, which you pleaſe to call her, whom you ſaw laſt night, for ſhe is both to me; but how great was his confuſion at the ſight of two ſuch miſhapen and unaccountable creatures as we are. I have heard him often ſay, that he had a great mind to have made away with us both, and for that purpoſe, had once actually caſt us both into the ſea; but to his great ſurpriſe, we both ſwimming to the ſhore with all imaginable facility, his heart relented towards us, and taking us up in his arms, he returned us to my mother again.

My mother always, for her part, ſays he, being exceeding fond of us, and (attributing our misfortune to a fright, which ſhe told my father ſhe had one day received from a ſea monſter, while ſhe was fiſhing) by degrees, induced my father to change his deteſtation into regard for us too; and he obſerving, as we grew older, that a human underſtanding was couched under our beſtial form, uſed every method, as our capacities enlarged, of improving them in ſome uſeful knowledge, which he hath often told me, anſwered his trouble,

far beyond any thing that he had ever obſerved in a real man before; ſo that the pleaſure he took in improving us, aroſe proportionably to our readineſs in receiving it; and having nothing elſe to do, moſt of his time was ſpent that way. He taught us geography, mathematicks, aſtronomy, geometry, divinity, and arithmetick in theory; all which, ſave arithmetick, I was a perfect maſter of at fifteen years of age; and as his own knowledge was ſo very extenſive, had he lived longer, (for he died in my ſixteenth year) he would undoubtedly have inſtructed me much further.

Whilſt he lived, my time was ſo taken up in the above exerciſes of art, that I had little left to purſue nature in; but what time I had was ſpent in the water, where my ſiſter and I caught fiſh for the family; and on my father's death, nature ſtill creeping more and more upon us, we were but little with my mother in the rock, but moſtly out at ſea; where having more knowledge of things than the brutes, our companions there, we would contemplate on the works of the great Creator in the deeps, and praiſe him for our reaſon and underſtanding; but then upon our return to land, and viewing our own deformity,

in regard to the reſt of the reaſonable creation, we would cry and bemoan our misfortune, in not being capable of exerting our ſenſes amongſt men, without ſhocking and confounding them, by the view of our bodily parts.

As for my mother, who lived about four years after my father, ſhe grew exceſſive melancholy, ſpending moſt of her moments in the little room you lay in laſt night, and at the end of that time died, being waſted away to a meer ſkeleton before her deceaſe.

Soon after my mother's death, my ſiſter and I finding ourſelves alone, and for ever like to be ſo, thought it no ways unlawful to indulge our natural appetites together; for having expectations, that the iſſues of our loves would prove ſimilar to ourſelves, they knowing no better than that all the world were like us, (if we did not undeceive them) would be happy in their own contentment, being after our deaths always capable of providing for themſelves as well as we could; for, ſays he, though we are men in faculties, our nature is beſtial, nor can we bear, or ever could bear to eat of dreſſed meat, as my father and mother did; for food has no reliſh to us, unleſs raw.

Now

Now pray friend, ſays he to me, what is your opinion of our condition? You are a by ſtander, and can judge impartially; ſhould you imagine yourſelf better or worſe for our capacities in our preſent forms? I could not readily give an anſwer to him, but on ſome ſilent reflection, I told him, (though I own my view to gratify him, out-ran my judgment) that I took the body, and the mind, or ſoul, to be two diſtinct things; this to be enduring, that periſhable; and as human faculties were the diſtinguiſhing mark of a reaſonable ſoul, which was the perfecteſt and moſt remaining ſubſtance; I was of opinion, that the benefit redounding from that, of being capable to know and praiſe one's Maker, and thereby ſecure to one's ſelf a bleſſed immortality, was preferable to the moſt exact proportion of bodily parts, which in few years, muſt neceſſarily crumble to earth; neither was he at all to think unworthily of thoſe parts, be they ever ſo deformed, which his Maker had pleaſed to endue with ſuch a ſoul; for (as he knew what was beſt and fitteſt to be done;) had he not judged the body of ſufficient dignity, he would never have placed ſo rich a jewel as the ſoul in it; and why might not all have been made like you, ſays I?

There is no reaſon but the divine will for it; and had we been ſo, we ſhould none of us have found fault with it, but have enjoyed ourſelves with equal ſatisfaction as we do now; then this uneaſineſs of yours is but comparative, for I doubt not, when you are upon your natural and proper function, but you find yourſelf entirely adapted to it. And again, ſuppoſe you had been like me, could you have ſupplied the wants, or ſuſtained the horrors of this loanſome habitation with equal pleaſure, as you now can? If not, how happy are you in your preſent form? Wholly applicable to the life deſigned for you? And I ſee no reaſon, but having been a meer man, you ſhould (in this retirement) have lamented your misfortune, of not having parts and capacities, proper for the lot you was fallen into.

I could perceive, by the ſatisfaction of the old man's countenance, the delight my diſcourſe had given his mind; and he told me, I had ſaid nothing but what he had before reflected upon, though, as he thought, with partiality; but ſince he obſerved in me the very ſame notions as in himſelf, he ſhould from henceforth reſt much better contented with his circumſtances, and inſtead of being uneaſy, rejoice

at

at the bounty of his merciful Creator, for what he was; and heartily thanked me, for the ſettled peace I had brought to his mind.

CHAP. XVIII.

Reaſoning between Daniel and the monſter. Shews Daniel his children. Daniel makes ſalt. Find the eagle ſafe. Shew it and its uſe to the monſter. Monſters catch an oil-fiſh. Manner of making oil. Views the contents of a cabinet. The monſter makes him preſents out of it. Finds a manuſcript of the monſter's mother's, containing her hiſtory and that of the monſter's generation. Afraid to inform him of it. Forms a project to leave him. Perfects it.

WE thought it now high time to return, for I began to be fearful, that Jacob miſſing me ſo long, would be uneaſy. In my way, he ſhewed me the ſea rolling in, in hundreds of places through the cuts of the rock, and told me, what a prodigious quantity of fiſh they contained; but

with this reflection, that he was betraying the ſecurity of his own ſpecies to me, which he ought not to injure, but for the neceſſity of his own food, and ſupport.

Obſerving that my making ſo light of what he called his misfortune, (and rather attributing it to the bountiful diſpenſation of providence to him, in his preſent ſituation, than to the frown and neglect of his Maker,) was ſo pleaſing to him; I took him up ſhort, for what he had ſaid, and told him, that the human faculties he was endued with, carrying in them ſuch ſtamps of a divine nature in him, as well as animal, and being an excellency ſo far above the beſt part of the brute creation, I thought him to blame, for ever mentioning himſelf in the worſt light that he might be beheld in; and adviſed him, from thenceforth to look upon himſelf as one of the moſt reaſonable creatures in the creation, but ſomewhat only diverſified in parts from others of them; which he promiſed me he would do, telling me, that he really beheld his condition in a much more eligible light ſince his diſcourſe with me.

I told him, as we went, that he had mentioned the woman I had ſeen as his wife, and inquired if he had had any children by her? he ſaid ſeveral. I then aſked, whether

whether they were ſtill living? he ſaid, yes, they were at home, but he had been under ſome debate with himſelf, (as they had never yet ſeen ſuch creatures as me and my ſon) whether he had not beſt keep them from the ſight of us, leſt we ſhould give them ſome occaſion to deſpiſe their own imperfections, and aſked me my opinion of it. I told him, it was not one of the leaſt of bleſſings, that no creature was capable of the ſenſe of greater perfection, than what it could collect from its own ſpecies, not being able to form a true notion of any diſtinct being from itſelf; and though I allowed, that the loſs of a part of what they ſaw in a being of their own kind, might be ſenſibly felt by them; yet the want of what they perceived in a being of another kind, could not affect them, as being in their own kind perfect; but leſt any thing like what he ſuſpected ſhould enſue, I adviſed him, before them, to condemn every part in us, which could cauſe a diſtinction from them; and that I would equally commend all ſuch parts in them above my own; which behaviour, would not fail to ſet themſelves, in their own imaginations, above a par with us. I further told him, that had he never ſeen his father or mother, or any other man till

he ſaw us, himſelf would naturally have been of the ſame opinion, that I would inculcate into his children. He ſmiled, and ſaid, he could not be poſitive but it might have proved ſo in that caſe, though now it was otherwiſe; and he believed his diſlike to himſelf, might in great meaſure be owing to the conſtant concern his father and mother uſed to expreſs for his being ſo unlike them.

When we returned, he carried me a great way further under the rock, into a vaſt cave, where were at leaſt thirty other perſons like himſelf, and alſo his wife, whom I had ſeen the laſt night; theſe, he told me, were all his children, and obſerving them to be ſurpriſed at the ſight of me, (taking my cloaths for a part of my body) and endeavour at avoiding me, he called them to him, which (with ſeeming reluctance) they obeyed; he then told them, that he had caught an odd ſort of a creature, in ſome reſpects like themſelves, but not ſo perfect, and deſired them to examine me, and report how they liked me, which they did, and finding me very gentle, they were not afraid to handle me; when one of them remarked what an odd ſkin I had; another ſaid, he could not think how I could ſwim, or catch fiſh,

with

with ſuch poor hands as I had, whilſt a third condemned my limbs, as monſtrous clumſey; but not one amongſt them ſeemed to commend me for any thing ſuperior to themſelves. This gave the old man great pleaſure, and me a peculiar ſatisfaction, for fear that a contrary behaviour in them, might have made me leſs acceptable to him: But being now cleared of thoſe fears, we lived very agreeably together in common.

Jacob, having now cleanſed all our utenſils, and brought them to be fit for uſe, I had a great mind to be trying them, and one of the young creatures having caught ſome fiſh, he gave me one, much more than Jacob and I could eat; we cut it in pieces, and boiling it in ſalt water, it gave it ſome reliſh, as I expected it would; but made it very diſagreeable to our ſtomachs, when it was down; for we were both ſick with it, all the reſt of the day. I was well aſſured, that as we had neither ſalt, or other ſauce, our fiſh would be very inſipid, only boiled in freſh water; but the next day we tried that, when though we were not ſick, it was ſo taſteleſs, that we had no ſatisfaction from it.

The day following, taking Jacob with me over the edges of the rocks, cloſe

by the water, I ſearched for ſome ſhallow hollow, in the extreameſt heat of the ſun, where upon ſcooping in ſea water, the ſun would ſooneſt evaporate it; and by ſeveral times filling it, and drying away, we perceived a ſcurf to ſettle at the bottom, and in the end got ſmall quantities of tollerable ſalt, which was a great refreſhment to us, and quickened our fiſh prodigiouſly; we had great abundance of water plants, towards the lower parts of the rock, which the family eat raw, but we boiled, and found very wholeſome.

We had now been here three days, before Jacob, who had been under deep concern all the time for the loſs of his eagle, (not doubting but that it was become wholly uſeleſs by its fall) could venture to take courage and examine it, leſt what he ſo much dreaded, ſhould prove but too true; nor would he have attempted it then, I believe, had not the old man preſſed for a view of its contrivance. We all went down to it, but the tender ends of the iron ribs being preſſed into too narrow a compaſs between the ſides of the rock, it was immovable for ſome time; till Jacob eaſing one ſide, and raiſing that almoſt upright, got under it, and bearing the floor on his back, by our aſſiſtance to

guide it, we brought it into the cavern, where it was broad and high enough to do as we pleaſed with it; then taking a lamp, the old man viewed it, and called all the young ones round him, to be ſpectators of it likewiſe.

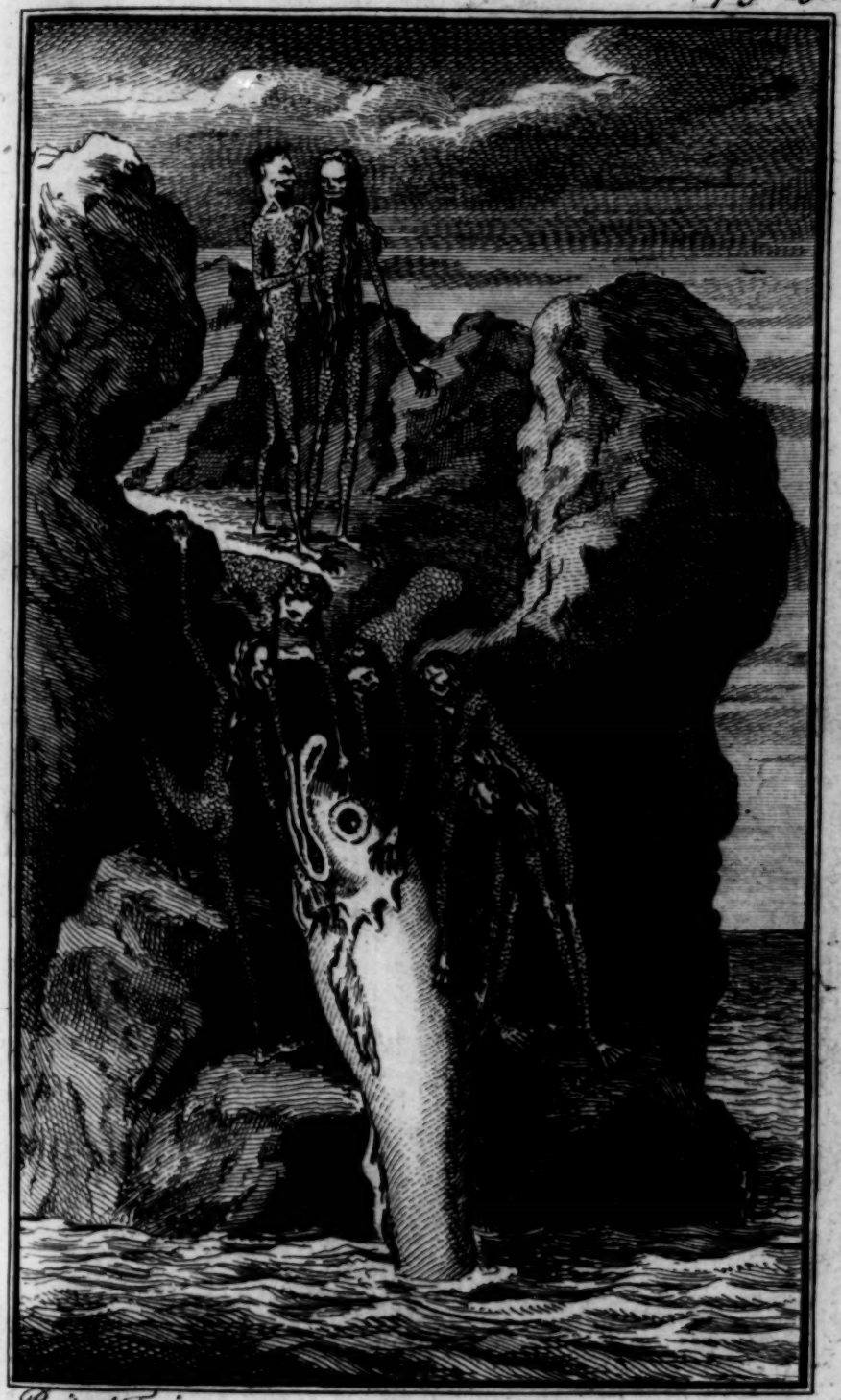
Jacob ſpent beſt part of the time they were ſatisfying their curioſity, in examining each rib, and the treddles beneath them, the calicoe and floor; and finding every thing ſafe, ſo far as he could yet diſcover, could not help demonſtrating his ſenſe of the joy it gave him, by outward ſigns and geſtures. Father, ſays he, I don't find the leaſt thing amiſs in it, it will do again, I am ſatisfied, as well as ever. The old man hearing this, nothing leſs would content him, than to ſee it move. I was willing to gratify him, being ſo very deſirous of it, and ordered Jacob to try it, as there was room enough, juſt to take a few ſtrokes; but Jacob declined it, leſt there ſhould not be air ſufficient in that cloſe place; however, our hoſt's importunity prevailed, and having got ſomewhat juſt to elevate it to a proper height for the wings to play, Jacob got up, and raiſed it; when at the firſt ſtroke or two of the wings, the young

crew ran away terrified, but the old one ſtood it.

We had ſeveral lamps in our hands to view it by, but the firſt ſtroke put them all out, and the ſecond and third being repeated very quick, we were ſcarce able to keep our legs, the wind it forced upon us being ſo very great; and that being reverberated by the walls of the cavern, and returned again by the next ſtroke, cauſed ſuch an eddy, that we tottered about like drunken men; but our lamps not being able to reſiſt ſuch a force of air, and being all out, the old man could not ſee it move, or otherwiſe diſcover that it had ſo done, but by finding it at the further end of the cavern, at the approach of light. He then examining the under ſide, preſently ſaw how it operated, and was contented, and Jacob forthwith went to work to take it to pieces, and lay it up, till a proper opportunity might offer, to make further uſe of it.

About a week after we had been there, eight of the young cubbs brought in an oil-fiſh, and a great outcry there was for help to land it, when the whole poſſe ran with incredible violence to the ſhore. Jacob and I were ſauntring about, and hearing the noiſe, ran likewiſe to ſee what was

the



Boitard Fecit

BRITISH
20 JY 63
MUSEUM

the matter; when we obſerved ſome in the water and ſome out, hawling with all their force a large fiſh on ſhore. The creature muſt have been at leaſt ten feet in length, and proportionably thick, and offered great reſiſtance; but they fixing their claws into his body in divers places, he became unable to ſtruggle, while they pulled him out; then two of them taking a vaſt ſtone, which I found lay ready for that purpoſe, and letting it fall with all their force upon its head, they ſoon diſpatched it; which was no ſooner done, than fixing their claws into its ſkin, they drew it up to a receptacle, purpoſely for that uſe in the cavern.

When all was quiet again, I aſked the old man, what they could do with that vaſt creature, it being more than they could eat while ſweet? he ſaid, they never eat that fiſh, but got oil from it for their lamps; and informed me, at my requeſt, of the ſimple manner of obtaining it. He ſaid, that with their talons they pierced its ſkin full of holes on both ſides, then leaving it in the place I ſaw them depoſite it in, they laid a long board upon it, and placing vaſt weights of ſtone thereon, as the fiſh decayed, the oil would ſweat out at thoſe holes, till it left the body like a dry cruſt, which they afterwards burnt. I was

mightily pleaſed with this ſimple ſort of proceſs, having ſeveral times wondered how they obtained all the vaſt quantities of oil they conſumed; but when I had heard this, and afterwards was witneſs to the produce of that one fiſh, my amazement ceaſed; that fiſh yielding at leaſt three kilderkins: and I obſerved that the wick they burnt in their lamps, was the ſpongy ſtem of a water plant, not unlike our bulruſh.

Having got ſalt, Jacob and I lived tolerably well, for we had the fineſt water that could be drank, being a perpetual diſtilling from the rock, into a little gutter, thro' the cavern, from whence it run into the ſea; but being minded to vary the dreſſing a little, I watched for the next oil-fiſh that was caught, and when the oil firſt began to dripple out, I ſet ſomething to catch it, and got about a quart, which ſmelling very freſh and ſweet, I fried ſome fiſh in it; this proved the greateſt delicacy that we had taſted for a long time, nor could any dripping, or butter come up to it. So that the next fiſh that was taken, I got abundance more of it, which I bottled up, in ſome bottles I found in a caſe, amongſt my landlord's father's goods, which I had free recourſe to.

After

After about two months ſtay in the place, I did not think it ſo irkſome; for having proviſion of herbs, and fiſh in plenty, and the old man being a moſt agreeable companion, I was very well reconciled to his ſhape by this time.

I had often wondered, what could be in the cabinet which ſtood upon the table; but finding it to be locked, I never aimed at opening it; I believe it might be about two foot long, half the depth, and about two thirds of the heighth of two feet. Wanting many times to ſee the inſide, I at laſt, after we had been there above a twelve-month, aſked the old man, if he had ever ſeen the inſide of that, for I ſuppoſed it to be ſome of his father's old furniture. He ſaid, he had ſeen it open many times, and that after his father's death, his mother was always writing at it, and he was ſure there was a key ſomewhere in the room, unleſs it ſhould happen to have been thrown into the ſea with his dead mother. My curioſity prompting me, I ſearched very diligently about the room, to diſcover the key, but could not; at laſt, lifting up the feather bed, for I would leave no place untried, I ſpyed a little pocket book, which opening, and feeling in its folds, I found it.

I unlocked it in the old man's preſence, and lifting up the lid, I perceived a flap to let down before, like a deſk; which diſcovered within it ſeveral drawers; in ſome of the uppermoſt of theſe, I found ſeveral womens trinkets, and utenſils, and deſcending lower, I found a watch and ſeal, and ſome rings, with a few other jewels; but pulling out the bottom drawer, which was of the whole length of the cabinet, I found it full of pens and paper only, with an ink ſtand, which had been long dry and uſeleſs.

I told the old man, that this drawer conſiſting only of papers, he might not poſſibly chooſe to have them ſcrutinized by any one but himſelf; but he told me, they were entirely uſeleſs to him, and that if I could make any thing of them, or do any thing with them, they were at my ſervice, for that himſelf could neither write, or read. How? ſays I, not write or read. How was it poſſible for your father to give you ſo much knowledge, as you are maſter of, without writing, or reading? He told me, that once he could have read a little, but after repeated attempts to write, his hands not being capable of managing a pen, he had neglected his reading alſo, till he had quite forgot it.

The

The old man having ſo liberally beſtowed his papers on me, I did not then take any trouble to examine them, being ſenſible I ſhould have leiſure time enough for that hereafter; ſo aſking him, if he would not do ſomething with the watch and jewels, he told me no; as for the watch and rings, he had often ſeen them, and the uſe his mother put them to; but their make had rendered ſuch things of no ſervice to them; for the rings would not go over their webbed fingers, or the watch hang to their ſcales; ſo that if I pleaſed I might have them all. I thanked him, but told him, I was afraid I ſhould have no more uſe for them than himſelf; ſo having locked up the cabinet and pocketed the key, we parted.

It was not till a long time after that I rumaged the cabinet again, when to my unſpeakable comfort, I found a ſmall bible, neatly bound, with ſilver claſps; I kiſſed it over and over, and would not have parted with it for the world. Thou, ſays I, wilt be my comfort, when nothing elſe will. I read a chapter or two in it, and then laying it down, I proceeded to ſearch the writings; and under ſeveral looſe papers, and a whole quire or two, I met with a ſort of manuſcript, neatly wrote, and

ſewed

ſewed together: Upon taking it into my hand, I ſaw ſomething wrote on the back-ſide, which upon reading, was as follows.

Reader, whoever thou art, if ever this little book ſhould fall into the hands of a man, lay it not aſide, till thou haſt added a tear to the millions its author ſhed at writing it.

This odd introduction, raiſed my impatience to peruſe the contents, where to my aſtoniſhment, I met with the following hiſtory.

After numberleſs invocations of the deity, in all poſſible forms that words were capable of expreſſing; for mercy, compaſſion, and forgiveneſs upon a creature wicked to exceſs; it began.

I Joanna Anderſon, a child of hell, and companion of demons, (how can I utter my ſhame!) was, when in life, the wife of Miles Anderſon, a child of heaven, a companion of angels, the trueſt and moſt loving, the moſt indulgent huſband upon earth.——Then, after reciting ſome former tranſactions between them, and the deſign of the voyage in which they were caſt away, with which I ſhall not trouble the reader; ſhe goes on; fate fixed us here, where having me, baſe, ungrateful, damned, deceitful me, with him, he ſuſ-

tained

tained his life with ſeeming pleaſure, rather than give me occaſion to grieve. We lived two years here, having been always childleſs, and Oh, that I had died ſo! Curſed curioſity! I had too much of our firſt mother in me, and rather than not try novelty, would ſuccumb to the devil, or his likeneſs. Then ſhe ſhews her weakneſs, and how ſhe had been often in dumb ſhew ſollicited to embrace a ſea monſter: And flying out into paſſionate curſes upon herſelf, which ſhew'd the depth of deſpair; I caſt off my love to my huſband, that dear huſband, and entered into criminal commerce with this brute, this beaſt, this devil, this monſter; nay, nor could I be ſatisfied without a daily repetition of my crime, till I became fruitful by him. Then ſhe raved again. Then ſaid, O loving huſband, at eternal reſt, how wert thou deceived by me! with what tenderneſs didſt thou look down on my ſpringing womb! thinking that, thine own which a beaſt had fecundated! here ſhe raved again. Thou waitedſt on me in my travail, hopeful of a return of thine own bowels; when, O horrid! none of thine, twin monſters appear, the lively reſemblance of their father beaſt; but beauties both to their viler mother! Curſed deformity

mity could not have proceeded from thee, O! huſband, huſband, mine, now no more! Here ſhe raved again. Yes, knowing them mine, and not doubting them thine own, how haſt thou dandled them; placing their beſtial ſnouts to thy ſoft lips, whilſt they infolded thy dear neck in their ſnake-like arms! This thou didſt, becauſe thou thoughteſt that I loved them, thy dear wife. Here ſhe grew wild and extravagant, and ſo abundant in blaſphemous imprecations and curſes, that I could read no more, nor ever have ſince been able to go through with it, it was ſo ſhocking to human nature.

Having collected as much as let me into the monſter's extraction, (for I could never after this think him man) I could not refrain from having a worſe opinion of him, than I had before, and had ſome debate with myſelf, how far it would or would not conſiſt with prudence, to inform him of his pedigree; till conſidering, that as he had ſo great a light of reaſon, as to deteſt his deplorable condition, now he took himſelf for a true deſcendant of the human ſpecies, depraved only by accident, he would undoubtedly be under a more pungent affliction, ſhould he be certain, under his mother's own hand, of his original

ginal from a brute. I wiſhed I could have been ſatisfied of the ſhape of the beaſt who had impreſſed her, from any marks in her hiſtory; but could not, from any thing, but from her ſaying, that upon her delivery twin monſters appeared, the lively reſemblance of their father, which in her extatick way of ſpeech, might allude to the genus, as well as the ſpecies.

From this time, I could no longer take the ſame ſatisfaction in the ſociety and converſe of the monſter, or any of his brood, as I uſed to do; and began to form a deſign of leaving him. I conſulted Jacob upon the head, who I found, wanted but little perſuaſion to inſpire him with the like ſentiments; and ſo without more ado, we told the old monſter, that we had been now ſo long confined to this narrow retreat, that we wanted to enlarge ourſelves a little in the air, and had formed a purpoſe of taking a flight, to ſee if we could diſcover land any where; that we thanked him for all his civilities to us, and would take our leave of him and his family, leſt by any chance befalling us, we ſhould not return again; but that if no accident ſhould happen, and we did not ſoon find the land we ſought for, we would return and end our days with him.

The

The old monſter was very ſorry to part with us, alledging that no part of his life, ſince the death of his father, had paſſed ſo agreeably, as the two years that we had been with him; he preſſed us very much to ſtay, or at leaſt to take him with us in our flight, for he longed, he ſaid, to ſee thoſe countries his father had given him ſo ample relation of.

I told him, that his regard for his family would certainly over-ballance any real intention of that kind, however in ſpeculation it ſeemed pleaſing; and that for our parts it was not impoſſible, but we might hit upon the Iſle of Providence in our travels, which if we did, we ſhould never have thoughts of ſtirring from it again; and then it would be impoſſible for him ever to think of returning. Theſe reflections, put him by his requeſt of accompanying us, and we having prepared every thing for our flight, and conveyed the eagle to the ſummit of the rock, we begged ſome of his dried fiſh, and a few bottles of water, and departed from the cave pretty early in the morning.

The old monſter inſiſted upon attending us to the eagle, and the expectation of the young crew was raiſed ſo high, that they would all follow him. We had before placed

placed the eagle properly for riſing, and then getting upon it, we at few ſtrokes left the rock, and this mixed breed of creatures behind us.

CHAP. XIX.

The courſe Daniel and Jacob took in flight. Alight and ſearch habitations. Find none. Take flight again. Fall in with Laplanders. They are terrified. Conſult their drum if they ſhall admit him. Daniel hears bad news from the Iſle of Providence.

JACOB was ſo alert and vigorous at firſt ſetting out, that if I had not checked him, we had certainly been ſoon out of ſight of the earth, but I told him the conſequences of ſuch an enterpriſe, for that it would undoubtedly involve us in the ſame difficulty we were in before; and inſtead of ſettling us in ſome known country, it would only tranſport us again to the moon, or perhaps ſome other planet, from whence we might never return. He ſaid, he did not chooſe to ſubject the eagle to any

any more ſhot, which was the reaſon he mounted ſo high; I agreed that we would not deſcend low enough to run that hazard, till we ſaw a convenient landing; but that nevertheleſs, if we kept out of ſight of port, we ſhould be bewildered.

Theſe reaſons, brought him to lower his ſails, and though we could not perfectly diſtinguiſh the regions we paſſed over, we were able to delineate the land from the water, and as we were ſure at our firſt ſetting out, that we were at a vaſt diſtance from any of the European countries, we thought we would ſpend one night in direct flight, and that poſſibly by morning we might reach them; ſo lowering conſiderably at the approach of night, and being ſenſibly aſſured, we were then over the ſea, we went on, though ſlowly, for fear of mounting too high. We were reſolved to keep a ſtrait courſe, as moſt likely to anſwer our purpoſe, and the morning and evening ſeveral times returned, but no land appeared. We had then thoughts of altering our courſe, which we had done, had not I adviſed waiting till next day; but alas! the morning came not as we expected; we perceived indeed a dawn behind us, as if the day was breaking forth,

but

but it ſoon left us, and the further we went the darker it grew.

How long we had flown in the dark I cannot ſay, but it was a long while, though we had a moon great part of the time, and ſeveral ſtreaks of light, which flattered us with the hopes of day, but no day came: At length we found ourſelves, for want of ſufficient light to direct us, very near the ſurface of ſomewhat, like a large plain of light, as white as milk, nor could we any where around us, obtain any other proſpect, ſave that every now and then, the horizon was edged with light behind us, and that more and more; this glare of light deceiving us, we were nearer it by far than than we expected, and I conjecturing it to be ſnow, from the ſharpneſs, and extreme cold of the air, told Jacob, that it was my opinion, we ſhould alight ſomewhere hereabouts, and ſtowing the eagle in ſafety, ſhould travel on foot, in queſt of ſome habitation or other; for I was ſatisfied it would not be long before we had more light, from the gradual increaſe that we plainly perceived of it, whenever it appeared; but Jacob, who had never before heard of ſnow, not chooſing to venture himſelf upon it, after the account I had given him, of its ſometimes

ſwallowing up travellers; told me, that as the light ſeemed to appear to our right hands, though rather behind us, his opinion was, that we ſhould make towards it, as the readieſt and ſpeedieſt means of obtaining it; and then we might poſſibly deſcry habitations at ſome diſtance, and be certain which way to go, if we landed in queſt of them.

As I could not but admit, that Jacob's argument was weighty, I acquieſced to it, and we purſued it; perceiving more and more light ariſing to us, as we travelled, till at laſt we had the glorious proſpect of the ſun. We by that light, after ſome flight, ſaw at a great diſtance, as we imagined, a city of large dimenſions, and finding it an open country moſt part of the way, till pretty near it; we ſought out a place to alight on, where we might beſt ſecure the eagle, in caſe we ſhould be compelled to have recourſe to it again; and there being a very high hill at hand, covered thinly with large trees, we without more ado made the beſt of our way to it, and directing our flight amongſt them, after a few ſtrokes we reſted.

Here we thanked providence for conducting us ſafe ſo far, and begged that we might meet with friendly entertainment from

from the inhabitants before us, and that they might prove to be friends to the Engliſh nation. Having done this, and eaten a piece of our remaining fiſh, after waſhing it down with a ſup of water, we ſet out for the city, which now we were on earth, we could no longer behold; but ſtill we retained the knowledge of its ſituation. We found it much colder now we were on the earth, (though ſtirring) than we had been on the eagle, and were ſenſible, that our cloathing, which was of callicoe, was not very ſuitable to the climate we were in; however, after ſeveral days ſearch, we could find no city, or any ſuch thing as an inhabitant, which greatly perplexed us, and cauſed us to imagine, that a ſtring of broken hills which we had paſſed, muſt be the ſuppoſed city we had ſeen; and relying on it, that it was ſo, we inſtantly returned to find the eagle; but had much ado to hit on the wood we had left it in, there being ſo many in our return, ſo like each other; but at length we obtained what we ſought for, and mounting it, (for we both grew more and more impatient for an end of our travels, as we were not now bleſt with a ſupply of our leaf, and the woods we had been in, were not only deſtitute of the leaſt proviſion, but were even bare of

leaves too ;) without more delay we got on the wing, and after a ſmall flight of no great height, for I alledged that our height was the occaſion of our being before deceived, and that it was the leſs neceſſary now, in a country where we had travelled ſo far without the leaſt ſign of habitations; we ſkimmed no higher from the ground than we could plainly diſtinguiſh different objects. On the further ſide of a barren mountain which we had juſt paſt, we perceived on a large plain, at a great diſtance before us, ſomewhat of vaſt length, ſeemingly in motion, which we made up to reconnoitre, and found to be a long ſtring of pack-horſes, as we imagined, with ſeveral drivers, and a number of people travelling with them.

The very ſight of the human ſpecies revived us; but we had met with ſo uncivil a treatment, where we before deſigned to have landed, from our own kind, that it made us very cautious how we truſted ourſelves near the reach of any engine of miſchief they might have with them. Yet not abſolutely to avoid them, we preſſed forwards, and ſoon perceived they had obſerved us, by their making a general halt, both of man and beaſt, and collecting themſelves into one body.

We

We could not obſerve any miſſive weapons that they bore, and being particularly certain, that we ſaw nothing like a gun amongſt them, we advanced within hearing, and called to them. Our firſt word brought them all to their knees, with their hands uplifted, and their bodies inclining forward to the ground. I aſked, in Engliſh, what countrymen they were? but had no anſwer. Then, being maſter of as much Dutch as would demand the ſame queſtion, (for I had learnt a little of that language from my wife, who underſtood it very well) I made the ſame requeſt in Dutch, but had no anſwer yet, they all continuing proſtrate, ſave one, who riſing, and ſtepping before the reſt, aſked me, if I could ſpeak Dutch? I replied in Dutch, yes, and again put my queſtion, what countrymen they were? he anſwered, that himſelf was a Fleming, but that all the reſt were Laplanders. I had never before heard of ſuch a name, and enquired how far it was to England? he told me, a great way, and demanded if I was an Engliſhman? I replied, yes; he was very glad of it, he ſaid, for that I had almoſt terrified them out of their wits.

I then bid him aſk his company, whether we might ſafely alight amongſt them,

and if they would aſſiſt us, for we meant them no harm; he returning, collected them all round him, and delivered his meſſage; but they were ſo affrighted with the thoughts of men deſcending to them from the clouds, that they at firſt deſired to be excuſed, and wiſhed us to go ſomewhere elſe.

However, the Dutchman begging hard for us, prevailed with them to enquire by their drum; who we were; where we came from; and whether our admiſſion amongſt them would be attended with any ill conſequence or not; which at length they agreeing to, he called to us to ſtay as we were till they had conſulted their drum: this we being forced to comply with, the operation began in the following manner.

The whole company drew up in a circle, then one of them with a long hollow oval inſtrument, (which we were after informed was a drum) ſquatted down in the middle of the ring, ſtriking and playing with this inſtrument. At length, he ariſing, began to twirl about, and diſtort himſelf into numberleſs ſhapes and figures; when after ſome time of exerciſing himſelf in that manner, he at once fell proſtrate on the earth, having ſwung his drum on his back, and with arms and legs extended at full

full length, he continued in that poſture for a very long time, during which, the reſt of the company ſeemed, by ſlow motion, to dance round him, ſinging, ſome louder, ſome ſofter all the time.

I had conceived from the Fleming, ſufficient grounds to conjecture, that this ceremony was a ſort of invocation of their deity, for his direction, whether to receive me, or not; and ſeeing the man lie for ſo long a time proſtrate without the leaſt perceptible motion, I imagined that he was ſlain, as a ſacrifice to their deity, to obtain a favourable anſwer to their requeſts, and was telling Jacob my ſuſpicion; when, of a ſudden, ſtarting up, and all the company dancing with him very merrily, they in an inſtant ſtopped; and he ordered the Fleming to tell me, that he had been at the Iſle of Providence with Ruth Daniel, who was dying with grief for the loſs of me. That my elder ſons had quarrelled with the younger for their ſettlements, and great miſchief was like to follow from it. That I was deſtined for England, and ſhould die there; and upon the whole, that I might ſafely land, and ſhould be received as a friend, and be maintained till my departure.

This declaration was no ſooner made, than the general voice proclaimed my welcome, and indeed we had not far to go to them; for having reſted, hovering in the ſame place ſo long, the force Jacob applied to the handle, was too weak to keep us at a ſtay, and I perceived we were ſunk conſiderably lower, while we had been on our parly. So dropping down amongſt them, I began to appeal to their ſenſes, (although our firſt appearance might ſurpriſe them, yet) that we were as really men as they were, limb for limb, part for part, and thanked them for their kind invitation to us; but their ſurpriſe was not to be exceeded, when they perceived us to be diſtinct creatures from our machine, which they took to be a part of Jacob, ſeeing him move up and down in working it; nevertheleſs, after a conſiderable gaze at us, their fears ſubſided, and we grew better acquainted. But the news I had heard of my wife and children, which the diviner delivered with ſo great an air of truth, and which I was fully inclined to believe, (not from the probability of it only, but from his declaring ſo readily the name of the iſland and my wife, with my childrens ſettlements) preyed upon my vitals like a burning flame, and almoſt conſumed

conſumed me; till recollecting, that he ſaid alſo, that I ſhould die in England, that, gave me a gleam of comfort; and as I had before relinquiſhed all proſpect of ever ſeeing any of my family again, their misfortunes dwelt not ſo heavily upon me, as they would have done, had there been but the leaſt hope of my ever more arriving amongſt them; for then my impatience would have been exceſſive till that time came.

CHAP. XX.

Stays with the Laplanders. Has hopes of reaching England. Different ſeaſons of Lapland. Daniel and Jacob's diſcourſe of England. Set out with a Dutchman on foot for Norway. Carries his eagle. Deſcribe the way. Adventures by the way. Hear of the whale fiſhing ſhips.

IT was now towards the cloſe of our ſhort day, and the halt I had occaſioned, having hindered the attainment of their projected ſtage, they determin'd to reſt where they were till next morning, moſt of which

time Jacob employed in taking his eagle to pieces, and packing it up in the wings; and before they ſet forward again, he obſerving a ſpare beaſt or two, had prevailed to employ one of them in the carriage of his eagle.

I had never ſeen ſuch creatures before, as their beaſts were, for they had large bodies and branched horns. I was well enough acquainted with the Engliſh Stag, to which this bore a reſemblance, but exceeded it ſo far in ſize, that I was ſure it muſt be of another ſpecies, and upon enquiry, I heard that they were rain deer, and the only beaſt for draught or burthen in that country.

I got the Dutchman to inform me, whitherto they were all travelling; he ſaid, only to ſhift their quarters, for the convenience of better proviſion for themſelves and cattle; then I entered into diſcourſe with him, how it might be poſſible to get to England; he told me, he hoped to be in Holland the end of the next ſeaſon for whale fiſhing, for that he was by misfortune left behind, on a little iſland in the north ſea, when the ſhips departed the laſt year; that he had two companions, but they were both dead, and the Laplanders, with whom he had often before been, were

ſo

ſo kind to give him entertainment, till the return of the ſhipping for the fiſhery.

I had now before me, I thought, a reaſonable proſpect of attaining what I had ſo much longed for; and ſtuck cloſe to, and contracted a particular intimacy with the Fleming for that purpoſe. The next day we arrived at the poſt deſigned, where we found part of an old hut ſtanding, that had been inhabited by them the former ſeaſon; and all hands falling to repair it, we ſoon rendered it habitable in their way.

By that time the hut was well finiſhed, we had a fine rain, and in the compaſs of a few days more, the ſnow was all melted, and run off the ground. Our time was now chiefly employed in hunting and fiſhing, of which there was ſuch abundance, ſo ſoon as the rivers and lakes were open, that it was amazing from whence they all came. As for foxes, otters, martins, and gluttons, we deſtroyed in a ſmall time vaſt numbers, for the ſake of their ſkins, with which they informed me, they carried on a great traffick; and the wolves being pretty numerous in the parts where we ſettled, we ſhot and hunted them with dogs, of which they had many very fine ones; and in theſe ſorts of exerciſes our time paſſed very agreeably.

We killed two large bears whilſt I was with them, and ſome wild elks; and the performance of our exploit upon the bears, was attended with abundance of ceremony, and extraordinary good eating the fleſh would have been, had it not been ſpoiled in the cookery; but as it was, we had a great feaſt upon it, and were all very merry.

I was extremely ſurpriſed to ſee, that ſo ſoon as the ſnow had left us, the earth put forth for vegetation, even in ſuch manner, that the very country, which but few days ſpace before ſeemed to be formed of marble, and that too incaſed in unfathomable ſnow, with ice incruſting every tree and ſhrub, was now transformed into a moſt verdant and delightful garden; all nature ſtepping forth in its brighteſt array of blade and flower; and the trees, buſhes, and ſhrubs, full leaved, blooming, and haſtening almoſt inſtantly towards maturity. The Dutchman told me, that every thing would continue in that perfection ſome months, with the ſun a conſtant ſpectator of it; but added, that ſeveral ſucceeding moons would viſit it in its former diſmal ſtate again.

We

We had not been a great while exerciſed in the above employments, before the Fleming told me, he believed it would be time for us to be going, for that the ſhips would be returning to the fiſhery; he ſaid, we ſhould have a long walk, as we muſt go over the mountains to Norway, before we ſhould meet with any craft to put us on board them, which would take us up ſome time. I informed Jacob what the Fleming ſaid, and that I was reſolved to walk with him; Jacob ſtarted; Father, ſays he, what can I do with the eagle? nay, Jacob, ſays I, now I have ſo great hopes of ſeeing my native ſhore again, I'll willingly deſert it, to the kind inhabitants of this country, whoſe humanity has ſupported us ſo long. Never think more of it man, we ſhall travel home in a more convenient machine than your eagle, and being arrived there, ſhall have no further need of it.

Truly father, ſays Jacob, if your countrymen are but like the people you would have me quit with you, I ſhall repent my ever having left the Iſle of Providence; for inſtead of that knowing creature you have always mentioned mankind to be, and the delight of his Maker; I have yet

ſeen

ſeen none of them, whoſe way of life ſeems to me a whit more rational in its ſtation than a brute; nor one of them with whom I would change condition; for they all ſeem to have acted to the height of their ſatisfaction and aims; but as for myſelf, I can perceive many deficiencies in my attainments; I am in daily want of ſomewhat I have not, and ſeem ſenſible, that I am capable of far greater things than I can execute, as being reſtrained from ſeveral means that I could, were they attainable, employ to the glory of my Maker and the benefit of mankind; and whilſt I am deficient in theſe, I can never be at peace.

You have, I muſt own ſon, ſays I, been hitherto introduced but to the inferior ſpecies of man, though when you ſhall arrive at my country, you will be of another opinion as to man's faculties; for when you ſhall ſee a ſubordination of mankind, ſome governing, ſome obeying, ſome directing, others executing, and each individual capable of performing ſomewhat of ſuch value to the whole community, as may be taken in exchange for food, raiment, and every other neceſſary of life; when you ſhall ſee thoſe who abound with all they can deſire,

and

and are even at a loſs how to employ their wealth, diſtributing it to others for trifles which themſelves want not; whereby each enjoys the comfort he aims at: you will certainly admire the methods of providence in the management of the whole.

Father, ſays Jacob, according to our firſt ſetting out, I ſuſpected that all the governors, and men of wealth, muſt be very happy men; but upon reflection, if the rich men want what the poor men can perform, though the poor men alſo want what the rich only can beſtow; yet I can't diſtinguiſh which of them is the moſt happy, for there is want on either ſide, and I feel by myſelf a real infelicity in wanting any thing, and why ſhould not theſe great men do the ſame?

I told him, that whatever they wanted, they could ſupply by their riches, every one being deſirous of being at their command, for the benefit of obtaining part of them for their own labour: As ſuppoſe, ſaid I, for inſtance, I am a rich man, and I want to have a magnificent houſe built; I then ſend and conſult the ſeveral operators, diſcloſe my mind to them, of what ſize and dimenſions I would have it, and then agree with them, each for performing his

his part; in which work, each of the poor artificers earn, two, five, ten, or more years ſubſiſtence from me whilſt the work is about; I, only living all the time at my eaſe, with the pleaſure of obſerving how the work grows daily nearer to perfection under their hands. Now don't you think, that I ſhould in that caſe indulge myſelf, far more than the labourers at the work could?

I am apt to think not, ſays Jacob: Why ſo, ſays I? You, ſays Jacob, want your houſe, and can never be ſatisfied till you have it, otherwiſe you would not have ſet about it; then can you be perfectly eaſy till it is finiſhed, for till then you muſt want it? I know by myſelf, while I worked at the eagle, that (having propoſed a particular enjoyment from it when made) I could not be happy till I had compleated it; and can you imagine, that you, who had in your own mind appropriated the ſeveral parts of your building to ſuch particular purpoſes, and expected ſuch enjoyments from the whole, could reſt perfectly ſatisfied for years together, without longing to be in the full fruition of the perfect work? for my part, I am ſatisfied, I could not. Then turn your thoughts from yourſelf to the

the workman. He cannot be happy, who involuntarily is bound either to work, or ſtarve: and yet he may be ſaid to be happier, whoſe daily labour ſupplies his daily want, than you, who from the nature of your undertaking, are obliged to want for years together.

Jacob, ſays I, hadſt thou received a liberal education, thou hadſt been a great man; I never knew the bottom of you before; you have been hitherto too reſerved and thoughtful, but that won't do when you come to England; you muſt be briſk and lively, and talk at all, not wait till you have an opportunity of ſaying ſomething to the purpoſe, for in ſome companies, you may not put in a word at that rate.

Jacob told me, he knew my country only by hearſay as yet; but that he had always thought, that the faculty of ſpeech given to man, preferable to the other parts of the creation, was a conſequence of his ſuperior endowments of mind; and that it was a great perverting of the deſign of providence, to turn it to wrong, or even trifling purpoſes; but if every one elſe did ſo there, he preſumed he ſhould ſoon fall into the cuſtom of the multitude; though he ſaid, nothing was ſo irkſome to him,

as

as to ſpeak to no purpoſe; for he thought ſuch perſons meer fools, that were delighted with their own uſeleſs prating.

He then begged we might contrive ſome way of taking the eagle with him, for he could not bear the thoughts of going without it. I told him, it would be too great an incumbrance for us to travel with croſs the mountains, which the Dutchman told me, were both many and dangerous, before we reached to Denmark. Father, ſays he, I dare ſay, we might eaſily carry the Dutchman with us on it, if he did but know the way, as well in the air as on land. Jacob, ſays I, you ſhall never mount me on it again, now I have once a moral certainty of reaching England, by means I am better acquainted with. But, ſays I, had ſome perſons, underſtanding in geography and aſtronomy, but a compaſs and your eagle, they would viſit every city in the known and unknown world, with very little trouble or loſs of time; the want of which conveniencies, have rendered its uſe to us ſo very uncertain.

Poor Jacob liſtened to me with a very cloſe attention, though he knew not what I meant, by the terms I mentioned, and was now more loth than ever to quit his future hopes in the eagle. He aſked me, if people

people in England underſtood thoſe things I had ſpoke of, and whether they would not teach him; I told him, nothing was more common than the knowledge of ſuch ſciences in England, and that ſeveral perſons made it their buſineſs to teach others for reward. The hopes of this, put Jacob upon declaring that if ever he arrived there, he would learn theſe things the firſt work he ſet upon, and then, ſhould not doubt paying a viſit to his brethren at the Iſle of Providence, and was now more than ever determined never to part from his eagle; ſo that growing at length importunate, I conſented to his taking it, if he could convey it thither; but that I would not incumber myſelf with any part of the carriage of it.

Our departure was now at hand, and Jacob had eſſayed to carry the eagle, but found it would be impoſſible for ſuch a length of way, and over ſuch mountains, as the Dutchman had deſcribed; ſo he applied himſelf to the maſter, or head of the family with whom we were, and laying before him his grievance, in the moſt affecting manner that he could, urging the labour that it had coſt him, the regard he had for it, and the affliction it would be to him to part with it, together with the impoſſibility

poſſibility of his conveying it to Norway, without ſome aſſiſtance; begged him to give him ſome old rain deer, of little value, for that purpoſe, aſſuring him, if it was poſſible, it ſhould be returned him, if he could meet with any one croſſing the mountains from Norway.

The old man was ſo moved with Jacob's pitiful ſtory, that he granted his requeſt, which raiſing a new ſpring of life in Jacob, he forthwith packed up his all, and away we went; but the earth was ſo dry, and the ſeaſon ſo hot, that notwithſtanding the many rivulets and pools abounding in the flat country, we could ſcarce walk from one to the other of them for thirſt; and we always took up our reſting place near one of them. As we lay once by one of theſe pools, we heard from a thicket, but little to our left, the howl of ſeveral wolves; this ſhocked us terribly, and I fearing they would immediately ſeiſe us, the Dutchman told us, that the rain deer would be our ſecurity; for that the wolves would not moleſt us, ſo long as they could come at that. This ſpeech raiſed Jacob's choler extremely, who, I dare ſay, had rather have loſt the Dutchman, than his eagle bearer; he ran to the eagle, and turning aſide ſome part of the wings, drew

out

out a rib, for each of us to defend ourſelves with, we having nothing but ſticks beſides. Theſe ribs were ſo very long and taper, that I feared they would rather turn, than penetrate the ſkin of the wolves; but however, we took them, putting ourſelves upon our defence; and Jacob beſeeching us not tamely to give up the beaſt, we placed it in the rear, and drew up to receive their onſet, who were now upon the full trot, with their tails extended, to attack us. Seeing us cover the beaſt, they wheeled a little, to take us in flank; but we ſtill facing, as they moved, (for there were but two of them) we always kept the beaſt behind us. Finding no good was to be done, by the method they had taken, one of them ſprung forward at us, before his companion, which Jacob obſerving, and fearing (as he afterwards declared) that we ſhould have retreated, and laid open the deer to them, he met it half way, and piercing the rib through his mouth, he forced it out at his flank. The beaſt, notwithſtanding this injury, preſſed forward at him with ſuch violence, as to force the rib out of his hand, and falling on him, would have torn him with its teeth, had it been able; but the rib as a gag, prevented it.

By

By this time, the Dutchman being neareſt, had ran to Jacob's relief, who was thrown down, with the wolf upon him; but with one blow on the head he knocked down the creature, and relieved Jacob, at which inſtant, the other wolf (beholding the fate of his companion,) turned tail, and fled to the wood again.

I then ſtepped, and aſked Jacob, if he had received any injury; but found him too full of joy for the eſcape of the deer, to give me any account of himſelf, till he had expreſſed his ſatisfaction for the beaſt's deliverance. He then told me, he had received no other hurt, than a ſcratch on his breaſt by the wolf's claw; and now, father, ſays he, what ſhould we have done without the eagle? You would have had me leave it behind us, but you ſee how it is calculated to ſerve us in more ſhapes than one; and had we deſerted it, we might all have periſhed here, for ought I know.

I told him, that as it happened, it was well indeed that we had brought it, but aſked him, how he durſt be ſo daring, as ſingly to attack the creature; and why he did not rather wait for our united forces againſt it? Truly, ſaid he, when I ſaw it puſh forward with ſuch fierceneſs, I ex-

pected you would both have retreated, and by delivering up the deer, have endeavoured to ſecure yourſelves; but was perſuaded, that whilſt you ſhould perceive me in danger before you, you would rather attempt my reſcue. As for the poor deer, I would have ventured a hundred lives for his ſake, rather than he ſhould have died with my eagle upon his back.

Jacob then drew out the rib from the wolf, and we examined its teeth and ſkin, and other parts, for it was a very large one; and then conſidering, that if we remained longer there, we might meet with another attack, (for we ſtill heard the creatures in the wood,) we marched on, about four miles further, and pitched again; but were reſolved, that one ſhould from thence forward always watch, while the other two ſlept, and this method we kept to through the whole journey.

We were eight days in paſſing only the mountains, and were good part of the time in great diſtreſs for water; but at laſt we reached Froſlau, where we heard that ſome ſhips were arrived for the fiſhery, but were gone more weſtward; this gave us ſome diſcouragement, but being ſure there were more to come, (according to the time of the year,) we kept a ſharp look

look out to watch for them, and at laſt eſpying ſeveral ſail, we got a boat, and went off to them.

CHAP. XXI.

Endeavour to get on board the whale ſhips. Deſcription of Daniel. Are refuſed. Speaks with captain Nevil. Offers a preſent for his paſſage. Knows the captain's family. Hears of his father's death and circumſtances. Relates his adventures. Jacob to work his paſſage. Jacob's death. Land at Aldborough.

WE laboured hard to lie in the way of the ſhips we ſaw coming, and they proved by good fortune to be Engliſh. As for our Dutchman, who had been before at the ſame employment, they made no ſcruple of taking him on board; but as for Jacob and myſelf, they could with great difficulty be prevailed on, even to hear what we had to ſay; not expecting we were any ways either able to pay for our paſſage, or to be ſerviceable in the ſhip.

As for myſelf, to be ſure, I had a very unpromiſing aſpect for ſervice, having a beard almoſt to my girdle, as white as ſnow; but though I was then juſt ninety years of age, I was as heart whole, as I had been at thirty, and could endure (tho' not ſo much labour as I could have done at that age, yet) much more than could have been expected, had I been twenty years younger.

I ſoon gueſſed where the difficulty lay, and deſired to ſpeak with the maſter of the veſſel in private. He received me into the cabbin, where, I told him, my life had been a ſeries of uncommon adventures, and I greatly coveted to lay my corps in England, my native country; that I had above ſixty years before, been an inhabitant of a place called Royſton in Hertfordſhire, which I would fain viſit before I died; that I could not boaſt of my ability to gratify him, in the ample manner he might expect for my paſſage, and that of my ſon, whom I had left in the boat; but as far as I was able, I would offer him a recompence, and that my ſon and ſelf would over and above work in the ſhip, according to our beſt abilities. I then pulling out at ring, with two large diamonds

in it, offered it to him for the favour of our paſſage. He looked upon it and laid it on the table.

I obſerved his countenance to brighten as he viewed the ring, which gave me ſome hopes his anſwer would be favourable. Then turning to me; from Royſton, ſays he, did you ſay you came? I told him, I did many years ago. What was your profeſſion there, ſays he? I replied, a ſmith, and that my father was of the ſame profeſſion. Was not his name Daniel, ſays he? I ſtarted at his pronouncing the name; nay, be not ſurpriſed, ſays he, if you are his ſon, I have heard much of him, in my youthful days. I aſſured him my name was Daniel, and that I was the ſon of Daniel the ſmith of Royſton. Says he, you are my countryman. Did you know any of the Nevils in your time? Yes, replied I, ſir James Nevil and his four ſons; I have done many a job for ſir James, and a worthy honeſt gentleman he was; but ſir, ſays I, he muſt have been dead many years ago. I don't remember him, ſays he, but he was my grandfather. And pray, ſir, ſays I, which of my good young maſters ſons are you? There was, let me ſee, my maſter James, he was the eldeſt;

eldeſt; there was Edward, Henry, and William. Lord ſir, ſays I, they are all now methinks before me here; fine gentlemen. But pray, whoſe ſon of them all are you? The maſter replied, that he was the youngeſt ſon of Henry. And pray ſir, ſays I, is your good father living, and your uncles? He told me, no, neither of them, but there were children living of ſome of them; but that the family was diſperſed over the kingdom, not one of them, or their deſcendants now living in Hertfordſhire. He ſaid, he had a wife and family in Suffolk.

I then begged he would inform me, if he had ever ſeen my father, old Daniel; he ſaid, he could not recollect that he had, but had often heard of his ſtory, and had many times ſeen Sarah Daniel, who was his wife, and went mad about the ſtreets when he was a boy. He ſaid, it was reported, that ſhe had abſolutely ruined old Daniel, and that he died upon the pariſh, but as for her, he had ſeen her within theſe twenty years, begging from door to door.

This report went the neareſt to my heart, of any thing that ever befel me; and I burſt out into tears, upon the reflection of

what my poor father muſt have ſuffered, and the juſtice of providence in repaying his misfortunes upon the head of that vile woman, my mother-in-law. Captain Nevil pitied me very much, and bidding me dry up my tears, he told me, he preſumed I was dame Daniel's ſon John, ſhe often mentioned, and for whoſe ſake, it was reported, ſhe went mad.

I told him, that I was the very perſon; though my tears proceeded not from any thoughts of her misfortune, which was but too juſtly fallen upon her; but that the remembrance of my poor father, and the application of his calamity to my mind almoſt overcame me.

Well countryman, ſays captain Nevil, be of good cheer, you are fallen into good hands; here, take your ring, put it up again, your age claims my regard for you, and makes you a proper meſſmate for myſelf; therefore eat you always in my cabin. As for your ſon he is better able to ſhift, let him lend a hand to what he can perform in the ſhip, and I'll take you both to Suffolk with me, if it pleaſes God to bleſs us with a good voyage. But pray, ſays he, what accident brought you into this unfrequented part of the world, and in this odd ſort of dreſs too? I

I told the captain, that my travels were ſo uncommon, and the turns in life I had met with ſo various, that they would, to relate them particularly, take up more of his time than he perhaps would chooſe to beſtow on them; but that whenever he was at leiſure to hear me, I would willingly declare them to him. He told me, that the firſt opportunity, he would demand my promiſe; then ordering me to ſee that my ſon came on board, and was provided for, I left him.

I went then to the boat, and took Jacob and his eagle on board, for he would have quitted life rather than it; I told him, how kind the captain had been to me, and that he was to work his paſſage to England, with all which, Jacob ſeemed very well contented, minding but little of what I ſaid, for viewing the ſhip and tackle.

We ſailed yet further north, and took ſeveral whales between three ſhips of us; ſo that they amounted to five whales and odd parts each ſhip, which the captain told me, was the beſt voyage he had ever made in that trade.

Jacob, who was always beſt ſatisfied under employment, was in a little time as active as

the beſt of the hands, in ſtriking, or recovering the whale, and wrought very hard in that employ; and after a little while, one of the beſt hands in the ſhip dying, the captain, who had often taken notice of his readineſs and dexterity, entred him on the ſhip's book, to receive pay; which greatly encouraged him to exert himſelf. But one fatal day, towards the latter part of our fiſhing, the whale being ſtruck, in ſight of the ſhip; as Jacob ſtood ready with his axe, to chop the running line at the edge of the boat; the line by ſome accident received a check, which he perceiving, and ſuddenly ſtriking to cut it in two, miſſed his blow, when the boat was immediately drawn under water by the ſtrength of the fiſh.

I was a ſpectator amongſt ſeveral others, of the fatal cataſtrophe, but it was out of our power to afford them the leaſt aſſiſtance; for before we could ſend a boat after them, the crew were all drowned. This melancholy accident, even (as one might ſay) in our voyage home, for it was the laſt fiſh we ſtruck, muſt needs alarm the tenderneſs of a father to a great degree; and ſo it would mine, had I not had a ſettled complication of afflictions on my

my ſpirits before: For the loſs of my wife, with the conſtant reflections on her ſufferings for me; the privation of all my other children; and laſtly the account I had received of my father's misfortunes, had ſo prepoſſeſſed all my ſenſes, that I had not room for ſeparate pangs on his account; nor was his loſs well capable of aggravating my former concern.

The worthy captain, who himſelf had beheld the loſs, exceedingly pitied me, and to alleviate my grief all that was in his power, was as indulgent to me as my own child could have been, which could not chooſe to moderate my diſtreſs, eſpecially in the preſence of my humane benefactor; and it was owing, in great meaſure, to his compaſſion for me, that I weathered the load of my calamities, till we arrived at Aldborough, within few miles of which place my generous patron lived.

CHAP. XXII.

Captain takes Daniel home. Relates his adventures to the captain's wife and children. Their reflections. Shews Mrs. Nevil the manuſcript. She cannot read it. Goes with captain Nevil to Royſton. Hears a melancholy account of his father and mother. Goes with captain Nevil to parſon Williams. Deſcription of the parſon. His entertainment. Parſon hears his ſtory. Send for the eagle. Parſon is ſatisfied it will fly. Reflections of the parſon's. Mr. Williams offers him a living with him. Shews them his watch and jewels. Value them at above a thouſand pounds. Preſents captain Nevil with a ring. Gives Williams the reſt to maintain him.

THE day after our arrival, he took me home with him, where he had a lady and five children, to whom (after an

an interchange of domeſtick endearments) he preſented me, as the wonder not only of the preſent age, but of paſt generations. The account he gave her of me, in few days, procured a requeſt from her, of a repetition of my paſt adventures; which was no ways to be denied, to a woman poſſeſſed of every quality, which could either command, or charm the heart of man; being the moſt compliant wife, and indulgent mother I had ever beheld; nor were her children, under the tuition of ſo excellent a pattern, wanting in any endowment that could render them uſeful to themſelves, or a bleſſing to their parents.

The good lady, in a day or two, (taking the opportunity of her huſband's abſence, who was then at Aldborough, ſettling the affairs of his veſſel, and calling me into the parlour, where I found her ſeated, with all the maſters and miſſes around her) deſired I would ſit down, and gratify that curioſity which her huſband had excited in her, to be informed of my life and actions.

I told her, that I was ready to obey her commands, and beginning with the occaſion of my leaving firſt Royſton, and then the kingdom, I haſted to my ſhipwreck

on the Iſle of Providence, and my difficulties there, till I diſcovered a wife in my comrade. She was expreſsly particular in her enquiries on this circumſtance, and whether I could not reflect on any tranſactions before the diſcovery, that I afterwards wondered I had not ſooner ſuſpected her by, and many other queſtions. I then went on to my clearing the wreck, of what proved prodigious uſeful to me; when the eldeſt maſter made many remarks upon my conduct in that affair, hinting, as if he could have managed better in that caſe. I went on to my marrying, and ſettling my children; when the eldeſt young lady, about fifteen, over and over, preſſed for information how old they were, and what ſort of a miſs my daughter was, and how tall? with many other remarks. But the ſecond ſon was wholly delighted with the bull baiting, as he called it, and aſked what ſort my dogs were of, and would have me deſcribe again the inſtrument, with which I told them I uſed to cut their hamſtrings; whilſt one of my young ladies and her mother wept heartily at the ſtory of the cow and calf, and the two youngeſt, I found, were moſt delighted with the ſow and pigs.

Having

Having gone through all the material tranſactions on the iſland, I ſet all their imaginations a-float, with the deſcription of my travels upon the eagle; but when I had landed myſelf on the mountains of the moon, you might have ſeen them on tip-toe, half out of their ſeats to be with me; and now it was more than I could poſſibly do, to anſwer regularly, ſo confuſed a ſet of queries as were propoſed to me all at once; and had I not extricated myſelf, by aſſuring them, that my ignorance of the country I was then in, had prevented my making further remarks upon it, or its inhabitants, than what I had before declared, I ſhould never have got clear through the remainder of my ſtory: So entring upon my journey back again, I brought their ideas home to our own globe, and deſcribed my precipitate fall down the cleft of the rock.

They all ſeemed now to ſhudder at the thought, and were almoſt converted to ſtatues; but the youngeſt crept cloſe together, without moving their eyes from my mouth, while I deſcribed the company that we met with at the bottom; and here again, I could have wiſhed myſelf to have been a good draftſman, which

might have ſaved a multitude of words in the deſcription; but the lady herſelf, and her eldeſt daughter, were with nothing moved ſo much, as with the account of mrs. Joanna Anderſon's manuſcript.

Seeing their paſſions riſe ſo high of concern and contempt for mrs. Anderſon; I told her, (but that I feared it might be diſagreeable to her,) ſhe ſhould ſee the manuſcript, for I had it in my pocket; ſhe earneſtly begged ſhe might; when having read here and there a little, and finding it full of ſuch horrid imprecations, and ſentiments of deſpair, ſhe deſired me to put it up again, as a thing proper for very few perſons to have the peruſal of.

I then went through the ſeveral other remaining paſſages of my life, till I came on board captain Nevil, and deſcribing the death of my ſon, landed myſelf at Aldborough; ſince which, madam, ſays I, what have I had to do, but to praiſe the hand of providence, which having delivered me from ſuch numberleſs perils, hath in my old age, raiſed me up ſuch noble benefactors, as the captain and yourſelf.

I then told her, I longed as much as a child, to ſee Royſton before I died, and fearing

fearing I had already tranſgreſſed too much on the captain's, and her good nature by my ſtay, that I purpoſed in a day or two at furtheſt, to ſet forward upon a walk thither. The lady ſaid, ſhe feared ſuch an undertaking would be too much for a man of my years; but I told her, nature had been very kind to me, for that I was no ways indiſpoſed, though I could perceive myſelf impaired much; and tho' I could not walk ſo faſt, or nimble, as a younger man, I could yet hold out as long; and conſtant progreſſion, though not to the height of ſpeed, would at laſt land me there, I did not doubt.

The next day, having dined, (after rehearſing to the captain ſome parts of my ſtory, and the great pleaſure ſhe took in hearing it;) the captain's lady told him, that I talked of walking to Royſton, and of ſetting out in a day or two. What? ſays he, to me, are you mad? You muſt not think to be the ſame man for ever that you have been. No, no, ſays he, it will be too much for you countryman; but you ſhall nevertheleſs be there, in about three weeks; for my dear, ſays he, I have a long time promiſed parſon Williams to ſpend a day or two with him,

and

and as he is an old ſtander in thoſe parts, and I believe knew mr. Daniel's father very well, I ſhall be never the leſs welcome for carrying the old gentleman with me thither in the chariot.

I told him, it was a favour too great for me to aſpire to, and that he had well nigh overwhelmed me, with the abundance of his kindneſſes already, even till I grew uneaſy, for fear of being too troubleſome to him. Leave that to me, old gentleman, ſays he; but however, for this once we will go together; for I have a little thing there, that uſually pays the charge of my journey, and it hath now been five years ſince I received a penny from it; and whether my tenant be living or dead, or whether he is run away or not, I can't ſay; but however, I am ſure of a hearty welcome at the parſon's.

Sir, ſays I, pray what family is this mr. Williams of? I remember ſomebody of that name, when I lived at Royſton. His father, ſays he, was a ſhopkeeper there, and having got a little money, ſent his ſon to the univerſity, where he became a parſon, and my father at his return from thence, took him into our family, as a tutor to his children, and gave him

him a little living about ſix miles from thence.

Well, at the appointed time, we ſet out, and arrived at the captain's tenant's, who after he had diſcovered who I was, (for he was ſomewhat ſurpriſed at the uncouth figure I made, with my long beard, and dirty callicoe cloaths, which were rather a wrapper than cloaths, wound round me in a peculiar manner) rejoiced exceedingly at the ſight of me, having ſo often heard the occaſion of my departure; he remembring my father very well.

We ſoon entered upon old ſtories, and my mother having made ſuch a noiſe all over the country, as a mad woman, and daily calling over my name, he was greatly deſirous of hearing the truth of the whole ſtory from my own mouth: So I related to him the fact, in the manner I have above ſtated it, not obſcuring the leaſt circumſtance. He told me, old Daniel had often repeated to him the folly of his wife, and ſaid, that ſhe had at my firſt elopement, robbed him of moſt part of what he had, and gave out to him, at his return from London, that I had done it, and that I had threatened to murder

her, if ſhe had not eſcaped me. Your father, with tears in his eyes, ſays he, at laſt uſed to blame himſelf, for giving too much credit to her when the truth came out; and upon the loſs of you, with all that he had been many years ſaving together, he grew ſo remiſs in his buſineſs, that it ſoon left him; and finding himſelf in years, and impaired through diſcontent, he was ſometime afterwards obliged to caſt himſelf upon the care of the pariſh for alms.

He told me, that though my mother lived well, and ſeemed not to be in want, ſhe would never cohabit, or even dwell with my father, though nobody could for ſome years, conjecture how ſhe ſubſiſted herſelf; till at laſt ſhe grew crazy, and then out came the whole truth; how ſhe had robbed my father herſelf, and would have lain with me, and praiſed me, for the lovelieſt creature in the world, and uſed to ſay, I was gone to bring her a fortune, and then would take her to my arms, where ſhe ſhould live for ever; and thus would ſhe rave about the ſtreets, till within eighteen or twenty years paſt, when ſhe made her exit in the fields, ſuppoſed to be ſtarved to death. He

ſaid,

ſaid, that her running mad, and diſcloſing her villainy, ſo diſturbed my father's mind, to think how far he had, through her perſuaſions, credited a falſity againſt me, that it broke his heart.

I having been appriſed of moſt of theſe facts before by the captain, they made much leſs impreſſion on me, than they would have done, had it been the firſt account I had received; and believing I had heard the ſubſtance of the whole tranſaction, was no further inquiſitive about it, than to aſk, whether my father's houſe was now ſtanding, and if inhabited, and by whom. He ſaid, it was ſtanding, and inhabited, but whether my father ſold it, or not, or by what title the poſſeſſor held it, he could not ſay; but having heard the captain ſay, we were going to parſon Williams's, he ſaid, we ſhould go by it.

After the captain had received what the old man had to pay, which was far ſhort of his demand, we ſet out for the parſon's, who I think was the moſt venerable perſonage, my eyes had ever beheld. Upon our chariot ſtopping at the door, before we had knocked, we ſaw him returning from his garden, in a black cap

over

over a white linen one, a neckcloth looſe about his neck, with an almoſt black night-gown, flowing behind him; he was of a tall ſtature, at leaſt ſix feet, with hair as white as milk, and a complexion clear as alabaſter, ſeamed with the furrows of time in it; but he had a good ſet of teeth, and a very bright eye, and to my thinking, had ſomething angelick in his aſpect. Upon ſight of the coach and the captain in it, his countenance was covered with ſuch an honeſt glee, as did my heart good to ſee it.

He embraced the captain, and looking up, to lend me a hand to alight, he ſtarted back; who have we here, ſir, ſays he, to the captain, one of the ancient patriarchs? or is it ſome Indian chief you have brought over with you? I'll warrant you an idolater, poor man. Then taking me by the hand, and ſaying little, (but that very plain, and in a forced accent, that I might the more readily underſtand him,) he led me into the houſe.

The honeſt parſon's heart was in raptures, at the ſight of his quondam pupil, nothing that his houſe afforded being eſteemed good enough for him; and in leſs than

than half an hour, the table abounded with a cleanly home made regalio.

At length the captain ſpeaking to me, and I (contrary to the parſon's expectation) anſwering him in Engliſh; I preſume, ſir, ſaid he to me, you have lived ſome time in the Engliſh ſettlements abroad, by your dialect. I told him, I had a large plantation of my own abroad and had peopled it, but that myſelf was his countryman; not a native, ſays he; yes, I told him, I was, and that Royſton claimed my nativity. I am amazed, ſays he, I really took you for an Indian. He then aſked, how long I had left England, and what parts I had ſeen? To which the captain replied, that when I was a little compoſed from my journey, I ſhould let him into a hiſtory, that would very much delight his contemplative genius, and that he brought me with him for that purpoſe; but that the firſt thing now to be done, was to procure me a ſuit of cloaths, which he would before have provided me, but for the ſatisfaction he had promiſed himſelf, in ſhewing me to him, in my own country garb; and I'll aſſure you, ſays the captain, whatever you may judge this gentleman to be, from his preſent appear-

ance,

ance, he is lord and proprietor of an whole iſland abroad, peopled all from his own loins.

The parſon then ſtaring more wiſhfully at me; ſir, ſays he, you muſt needs be of a very great age. I replied, upwards of ninety. Good lack, ſays he, a great age indeed, and how upright he walks. I am ſeventy-five myſelf, but have nothing of your ſtrength in me. The air ſir, the air, is a great contributor to length of days; ours is too heavy and vapoury, to preſerve the lungs ſo long in many conſtitutions.

The captain then ſent for a taylor, to make me a ſuit of cloaths, and in about three days time, I was habited in the Engliſh manner; but my beard which had ſo many years been my conſtant companion, I would not part with at any rate.

I then gave the parſon an account of my parentage, and he ſaid, he very well remembered my father, and the crazy dame Daniel, whom he had many times relieved at his gate; for though the country in general believed her ſtory, yet for his own part, imagining that it proceeded only from a diſtempered brain, he gave but little credit to it: But upon my con-

confirmation of it afterwards, he then believed it.

I found more ſatisfaction from the repetition of my ſtory to the parſon, than I had ever had from the like, to any perſon before; for his remarks and queries, were all made and demanded with ſolidity and judgment. And then his opinion upon my flight, and the conſequences were ſo convictive, that they left me no uncertainty of the concluſions he drew from the particular facts. And though I before had my doubts, of the reality of my landing in the moon, notwithſtanding the monſter had nearly convinced me of it from his reaſons; yet the parſon's arguments were founded upon ſuch, and ſo many convincing concluſions, and deductions, that it was to me, next to impoſſible to deny him aſſent; but he regretted my coming without my eagle, and ſeemed to repeat that ſo often, and ſincerely, that the captain, who took great delight in hearing us diſcourſe on theſe affairs, promiſed him to ſend for it, and did ſo.

When it came, I was at a loſs how to put it together; and the parſon having ſurveyed the ſeveral pieces of which it was compoſed, told me, he could not ſee the

uſe

uſe of many of them, nor could imagine how I could cauſe it to fly, when it was compleat. I aſſured him, that the fact was experimentally true, that it did, and would fly, and that at a prodigious rate too; and that though I had not now in my head the particular manner of my ſon's uniting the parts; yet as I had ſeen him do it, I was ſatisfied I ſhould be able to accompliſh it. I began with my four poſts firſt, that then I might have a view of the bottom and top at once; and having jointed the floor, (which I aſſured him was the firſt ſtep to be taken,) I from thence proceeded to the ſeveral parts, which neceſſarily offered of themſelves, ſucceſſively to compoſe the whole apparatus; then fixing my pump, I opened the trap door, and aſcended the floor.

The parſon having ſurveyed the whole ſtructure round and round; I have always thought, ſays he, that there is more art and ingenuity ſhewn, in attaining one's ends by ſimple, than by complex means; and if this eagle, as you call it, anſwers the purpoſe, I ſhall be the more confirmed in my ſentiments. What a plain machine is here? I expected numbers of wheels and pullies, with different flyers,

from

from what you preſent me with; but am now ſatisfied, that if your force is but proportionably greater than your weight, the thing muſt do; then pray let me ſee you raiſe it from its ſupporters?

At his requeſt, I gave a ſtroke or two with the wings, which mounted me about the heighth of the apple-trees, in the orchard we had fixed it in; but I ſoon let it gently down on the ground, being fearful of ſpoiling the wings amongſt the trees; then getting off from it, I aſked mr. Williams, what opinion he had of it. He claſped me in his arms, mr. Daniel, ſays he, I would have quitted the imperial crown of theſe realms with pleaſure, to have been where you have, and to have returned as ſafe; and was I a young man again, would to-morrow take my flight upon this your eagle. There is not ſo ſublime a notion of the divine Being to be obtained by any other means, as ariſes from the contemplation of his works; then what a fountain of joy and delight, praiſe and gratitude, muſt ſpring up from the actual ſurvey of them; I mean the remoter parts of them, thoſe as yet, viewed but through a cloud, and only gueſſed at from imperfect hints and ſurmiſes. I would not only have gone to the Moon,

our

our neighbour planet, but to Venus, nay Mars, Jupiter, and even Saturn himſelf, had my years laſted, ſhould have been viſited by me. O, I had there ſeen the order, regularity, and nice diſpoſition of Jupiter's ſatellites, and diſcovered the uſe of Saturn's ring; I had obſerved the form, the deſigns, the exerciſe, and faculties of the ſeveral ſpecies of inhabitants; united my voice to theirs, in praiſing our great Creator and Preſerver; and whether ever I had returned or not, what had it mattered, ſo that my ſoul had been filled with the ſenſe of thoſe mighty works of creation, and of the omnipotent Agent that performed it all.

Mr. Williams, ſaid I, you forget a moſt neceſſary thing for your journey, if you ſhould have ſet out with a view of ſo diſtant a tour. He aſked me, what that was? My herb, and leaf, ſaid I, for otherwiſe it would have been impoſſible to have victualled your eagle for ſuch a flight. He told me, that was true; but he believed the air in thoſe upper regions was too pure to corrupt, and turn our aliment to digeſtion, ſo ſoon as it did here below, and that therefore much leſs quantity would ſerve; but I am too old, too old, to put my wiſhes in practice, ſays

he, or I would make the attempt, though I periſhed in it.

Having gratified the parſon's curioſity, and the place being very improper for further experiments, I took the eagle in pieces, and packed it up again; but it ſerved us for diſcourſe at times, all the while the captain ſtayed, which was about three weeks.

I one day adviſing with them, how I ſhould diſpoſe of myſelf now I was returned home; the captain propoſed my travelling with, and expoſing the eagle for my ſubſiſtence; but the parſon was much againſt it; would you have a man of his years, and aſpect, ſays he, be obliged to pleaſe every fool that can pay a penny for a ſight? No, ſays he, mr. Daniel, I will not part with you, but upon ſome better ſcore than that. I am an old batchelor, and have only my nephew with me, he is now keeping his term at Cambridge indeed, but I ſay, he is my chief companion, and one who will be as well pleaſed with the examination of your eagle as myſelf, and will as much admire your company; and if you have no better way of ſubſiſting, you ſhall be welcome to my houſe till one of us drops.

I moſt ſincerely thanked him, telling him my treaſure was but ſmall, and all about me; then pulling out my gold watch, rings, and ſome other jewels, which the monſter had preſented me with, I laid them down upon the table; there, ſays I, is all that I am worth in the whole world. The parſon took up the watch, and opened it, while the captain was ſurveying the jewels. This is a very fine watch, ſays he; ay ſir, ſays I, the things are worth ſomething; but alas, when a man is to talk of a living for life, what are they? And though I am ſo old, yet being ſo ſound and hearty, I may live years yet. Pray, ſays the captain, how much a year would content you? I told him, I was as yet a ſtranger to the price of things, or what might be done for how much money; but I ſhould judge from my paſt remembrance, that I could live upon five and thirty, or forty pounds a year like a gentleman. I'll give you fourſcore pounds a year, ſays he, for your life, for all theſe things. Say you ſo, ſir, replied I; truly, ſince mr. Williams was ſo kind to offer me my living free, I had in my own mind diſpoſed of them all to him, as a recompence for his kindneſs. Nay, ſays the captain,

captain, I'll be no hindrance to my friend Williams I'll aſſure you; but ſhall rather rejoice at any benefit of his, than my own.

I then deſired the captain to give me his opinion of their value; he told me, he had not examined them very ſcrupulouſly, nor could he exactly gueſs their weight, but that allowing for all miſtakes, he would give a thouſand pounds for them, and they might be worth, poſſibly, half as much more.

Gentlemen, ſays I, you two are the perſons in life I am the moſt beholden to; the captain, for his paſt generous actions, and you mr. Williams, for your intentions to me; therefore as I am an old man, and have no other reliſh in life, but to paſs my time in eaſe and plenty, as to my bodily concerns; and under a ſtrict regard to my Maker's will, and a thorough contemplation of his mercies, as to my ſpiritual; all which I doubt not good mr. Williams will aſſiſt, and direct me in: I muſt deſire you captain, to accept of this ring, as a preſent from me, to that reſpectable lady your wife; and for all the reſt, which I am very well pleaſed to hear is ſo valuable, I here freely preſent it to mr. Williams, for the future ſupport and burial of

me. Thus having made my will, and put each party in poſſeſſion of their ſeveral legacies, I had nothing further to do in life, than to receive ſuch daily ſupport as would ſuſtain it, till ſuch time, as it ſhould pleaſe the great preſerver of it, to demand it at my hands; and to pray for mercy to myſelf, and bleſſings to my family abroad.

Having now conducted my reader through a ſeries of uncommon adventures, let him remember that life is but a journey, and the grave his home.

CHAP. XXIII.

Account of the writer of this hiſtory, nephew to mr. Williams. Put into form by him. Williams's death. The writer his executor. Takes mr. Daniel to Durham. Grows childiſh and dies.

THAT the whole life and actions, of the before-mentioned John Daniel, might be the more compleat, I have thought proper, not only to give an account how the foregoing hiſtory came into the form the reader finds it in, but likewiſe

wiſe to inform him further of ſuch tranſactions as happened, till the death of mr. Daniel, wherein he had any concern; for which purpoſe, it may be proper to acquaint the reader, that the continuator of this hiſtory, is Ralph Morris, the beforementioned nephew, of the reverend mr. Williams.

I was, (as you have heard) at Cambridge, when captain Nevil, and mr. Daniel arrived at my uncle's, and did not return till after captain Nevil's departure. When I came to my uncle's, he being then upon a viſit, I was ſtartled, at the appearance of a very grave, and old man there, whom I was an utter ſtranger to; and the more ſo, as knowing all my uncle's acquaintance, and that he kept but little company. We juſt bowed to each other, by way of ſalute, but as he ſaid nothing to me, I was as ſilent towards him; and going to the kitchen, our maid, upon enquiry, told me, that the ſtranger came ſometime ſince with captain Nevil, and was left behind him; but ſir, ſays ſhe, if you had ſeen him when he firſt arrived, you would have taken him for ſome dirty ghoſt, he made ſuch a ſtrange figure.

I enquired who, and what he was, and whether an Engliſhman or a foreigner; ſhe ſaid, ſhe knew nothing more of him, than that he ſpoke good Engliſh, and was a very civil old man.

It was not long before my uncle returned, and then he introduced me to old Daniel, as his nephew, and I ſoon became better acquainted with him. The old man's ſtory, when I had heard it, affected me prodigiouſly; and my uncle and I, being both of opinion, that there was much matter in it, very worthy of conveying to poſterity; he propoſed to me, to take down the ſeveral occurrencies of mr. Daniel's life, in writing, and from thence, to compoſe a regular narrative of all his tranſactions; which from the uncommonneſs of the ſubject, I readily undertook, with mr. Daniel's approbation; and my uncle having examined it, with mr. Daniel, I was deſired to digeſt it into a regular piece; which with what further remarks and paſſages mr. Daniel could afterwards recollect, I did in the above manner; chooſing rather to let it run in the firſt perſon as his own act, than in the third, as that of the reporter only; it being, in my mind, more eligible to hear what a man ſays of himſelf,

ſelf, than what another ſays of him. And having finiſhed it, my uncle gave it a place in his ſtudy, amongſt his other manuſcripts.

About two years after this work was finiſhed, my uncle died poſſeſſed of a ſmall fortune, which he bequeathed to me, and made me his executor; but made his bequeſt, ſubject to my keeping, maintaining, and providing for mr. Daniel, during his life. This condition I readily accepting with his fortune; and being obliged to quit the parſonage houſe to the next incumbent, I retired with him into the biſhoprick of Durham, where I had a ſmall patrimony of my own. Mr. Daniel lived not with me above twelve-months longer, before his ſenſes grew very much impaired, and he ſoon after, became quite childiſh; remaining in that ſtate near two years more, and then died. I buried him in a decent manner, placing a ſmall ſquare marble over his head, with this inſcription, *Siſtit viator fatigatus Johannes Daniel, ob.* 13 *Aprilis* 1711. *Ætat* 97.

F I N I S.